SOUTHEAST ASIAN STUDIES

Vol. 2, No. 3 December 2013

CONTENTS

SPECIAL FOCUS

Introduction: Reconstructing Intra-Southeast Asian Trade, c.1780–1870: Evidence of Regional Integration under the Regime of Colonial Free Trade

Kaoru Sugihara* and Tomotaka Kawamura**

This special focus provides a set of statistical knowledge on intra-Southeast Asian trade from the late eighteenth to the mid-nineteenth centuries, to better understand the ways in which Southeast Asia became integrated into both long-distance trade and intra-Asian trade. In so doing, it explores aspects of how and why some of the traditional trading networks of the region survived the Western impact and came to play a vital role in the process of regional integration.

In 1985 Kaoru Sugihara suggested that there was a growth of intra-Asian trade in the period 1880–1913, under the impact of the Industrial Revolution in England and the subsequent diffusion of industrialization in Europe and the United States. Unlike other parts of the non-European world, he argued, the rate of growth of intra-Asian trade during this period was faster than that of long-distance trade between the West and Asia. Over the last quarter of a century, relationships between long-distance trade—which is the trade between the West (United Kingdom, industrial Europe, and the United States) and Asia—and intra-Asian trade—which is the trade between India, Southeast Asia, China, Japan, and other Asian countries—have been vigorously explored; and trends in Asian regional integration, reflected in intra-regional trade, migration, and remittances, have been highlighted. Among the major observations is that during the high colonial era, from 1870 to 1914, Southeast Asia experienced the highest rate of export growth among Asian regions through its incorporation into both world and regional economies at almost equal speeds (Sugihara 1985; 1996; 2005).

* 杉原　薫, National Graduate Institute for Policy Studies, 7-22-1 Roppongi, Minato-ku, Tokyo 106-8677, Japan
Corresponding author's e-mail: k-sugihara@grips.ac.jp
** 川村朋貴, Graduate School of Humanities and Sociology, The University of Tokyo, 7-3-1 Hongo, Bunkyo-ku, Tokyo 113-0033, Japan

However, there has been little statistical work on Southeast Asian trade before 1870, to understand how the region responded to the Western impact as compared to other Asian regions, especially after the demise of the Dutch East India Company's monopoly at the end of the eighteenth century. Difficulties with data, due to territorial changes and the lack of data on local and regional commerce conducted by Asian merchants, prevented progress toward a fuller understanding. It is only during the last 15 years or so that leading scholars have begun to pay attention to this period and empirical research has been assembled, with the spirit of revising the traditional picture that the period was economically "static," if not in decline or disintegration, and that little could have been changed or transformed in the way of local and regional commerce. Anthony Reid and others have argued that the period between the mid-eighteenth and nineteenth centuries was an era of dynamic commercial expansion, questioning the view that there was no expansion comparable to those in the earlier "age of commerce (c.1450–1680)" and the colonial high noon (c.1870–1940) took place. In particular, the years between about 1760 and 1850 saw a distinct commercial expansion in the region, which was stimulated by a remarkable growth in Chinese junks and migration from southern China, an increase in local Malay shipping, and the impact of British private traders. During this period, Reid argues, Southeast Asia appears to have experienced an even greater increase in shipping and exports than during the high colonial period (Reid 1997; 2004).

Meanwhile, Sugihara argues that there was a growth in intra-Asian trade during the first half of the nineteenth century, partially revising his earlier assumption that regional trade started to respond to the Western impact in earnest in the late nineteenth century, and that the nature of this early nineteenth century expansion was substantially a trade in necessities such as rice and cotton cloth for ordinary people, similar in character to intra-Asian trade at a later stage, rather than a trade induced by country traders and the "opium triangle." He notes that Penang and Singapore were key contributors to the growth of multilateral trade patterns in and around Southeast Asia, integrating both traditional trade and the impact of long-distance trade into a coherent whole (Sugihara 2009). It should also be remembered that Hiroyoshi Kano suggested a similar perspective on the expansion, strong continuity, and transformation of intra-Southeast Asian trade from the eighteenth to early twentieth centuries, although he did not fully explore the availability of trade statistics and other sources (Kano 1991). This focus builds on the above works and suggests that there was a growth of intra-Southeast Asian trade in the early to mid-nineteenth century, reflecting active interactions between the new Dutch and English engagements in long-distance trade and the rise of Asian merchants in Southeast Asia, centering on Java, Singapore, and other major colonial ports and encompassing large areas of the "Outer Islands" and non-Dutch parts of Southeast Asia.

The three papers offer a detailed statistical study of the local and regional trade of Singapore, Java, and the Dutch Outer Islands. Making use of both English and Dutch statistical sources, the papers discuss the impact of the transition in long-distance trade from the dominance of the Dutch East India Company to the regime of colonial free trade under the Anglo-Dutch Commercial Treaty on local and regional trade in Southeast Asia, and the role that imports of English cotton textiles, Java's coastal trade, and exports of non-colonial products from the Dutch Outer Islands to China and other Asian countries played in transforming regional commerce. An intended historiographical contribution is a reinterpretation of Dutch trade data in a broader regional context, especially against the rise of British trading posts.

More specifically, Atsushi Kobayashi's paper traces the growth of Singapore's intra-Southeast Asian trade from the 1820s to 1852. Singapore began as an intermediary in local and regional trade before developing into a fully equipped international entrepôt, and it is here that we see most clearly the interactions of local and regional trade networks and the impact of imports of Lancashire textiles from Britain. While imports of cheap machine-made cloth must have induced local demand, the product's distribution across the region depended on the development of both an efficient Chinese trading network and its active relationships with local traders. Exchange of primary products for local consumption, including rice, was an integral part of the growth of multilateral trade patterns, now centered on Singapore. While Java's trade with the Netherlands continued to be the single largest component of Southeast Asia's trade throughout this period, the growth of local and regional trade, encompassing most of the territories under Dutch control, was driven by the principle of free trade by 1840, under the full enforcement of the Anglo-Dutch Treaty of 1824. With this change in mind, the other two papers reexamine Dutch data to extract information on intra-Southeast Asian trade. Ryuto Shimada's paper attempts to qualify the picture that Java's trade was dominated by long-distance trade, especially with the Netherlands, by examining the persistence of coastal trade from the late eighteenth century onward, involving Chinese and other non-Dutch merchants, and the resurgence of trade with the Outer Islands in the second half of the nineteenth century. He backs his argument about the structure of trade in the first quarter of the nineteenth century, for which reliable annual data are missing, with reference to data from both the late eighteenth century and the second half of the nineteenth century, to make a judgment of long-term change in the structure of trade. Atsushi Ota's paper supplements this Java-centered account by focusing on the Dutch Outer Islands trade, to argue that non-colonial products, predominantly for the Chinese market, were often more important than colonial products bound for Europe, and that this "China-oriented trade structure" continued well into the nineteenth century. His data do not cover the

entire Outer Islands (important trading posts in Aceh, North Sumatra, Bali, and Lombok are not included), but his is the first systematic attempt to suggest that the linkages between the imports of British cotton textiles and exports of non-colonial products to China and other parts of Southeast Asia as a mechanism of trade growth were present, not just via Singapore but across major trading ports, by the middle of the nineteenth century.

Thus, our tentative hypothesis is that the disruptive break around the turn of the century as a result of the European regime shift from mercantilism to free trade was a relatively limited one, and that the basic patterns of intra-Southeast Asian trade, including Java's coastal trade and Outer Islands trade, survived and acted as a vital agent in the region's integration into the international economy during the first half of the nineteenth century. We do acknowledge increased activities of American, Chinese, British, French, Indian, and Bugis traders during the period 1780–1820, when trade regimes were largely disrupted or absent. Trade was subsequently restricted by the more forceful impositions of Dutch and English colonialism. Nevertheless, we suggest that a new regime dominated by Anglo-Dutch commercial relations emerged at the same time, and it opened up the possibilities for regional integration across colonial borders in a way that would make Southeast Asia accessible to both the West and Asia.

Our results remain a modest effort toward such an understanding, not least because our discussion is based solely on colonial trade statistics, without taking into account the presence of unrecorded local and regional trade activities, which must have been substantial. We hope that this focus will further stimulate research in this area and contribute to a fuller understanding of the continuity and discontinuity in Southeast Asian economic history.

This focus is the first part of the research outcome of two consecutive projects (April 2010–March 2012 and April 2012–March 2013) under the funding of the International Program of Collaborative Research at the Center for Southeast Asian Studies, Kyoto University. The first project was organized by Tomotaka Kawamura, and the first half of this introduction is based on the research proposal he wrote four years ago. Unfortunately, he was not in a position to act as editor of this focus; Sugihara, the organizer of the second project, has edited it. He is responsible for the content of this introduction.

On behalf of all the authors in this focus, we thank an anonymous referee for extremely insightful comments, from which we have greatly benefited.

Accepted: August 19, 2013

References

Kano Hiroyoshi 加納啓良. 1991. Ajia Ikinai Koeki to Tonan Ajia Shokuminchi Shihai アジア域内交易と東南アジア植民地支配 [Intra-Asian trade and colonial rule in Southeast Asia]. In *Ajia Koeki Ken to Nihon Kogyoka 1500–1900* アジア交易圏と日本工業化 1500–1900 [Asian trade sphere and Japanese industrialization 1500–1900], edited by Takeshi Hamashita and Heita Kawakatsu 浜下武志, 川勝平太, pp. 52–67. Tokyo: Riburo Poto. (New edition 2001, Tokyo: Fujiwara Shoten.)

Reid, Anthony. 2004. Chinese Trade and Southeast Asian Economic Expansion in the Later Eighteenth and Early Nineteenth Centuries: An Overview. In *Water Frontier: Commerce and the Chinese in the Lower Mekong Region, 1750–1880*, edited by Nola Cook and Li Tana, pp. 21–34. Singapore: NUS Press; London: Rowman & Littlefield.

————. 1997. A New Phase of Commercial Expansion in Southeast Asia, 1760–1850. In *The Last Stand of Asian Autonomies: Responses to Modernity in the Diverse States of Southeast Asia and Korea, 1750–1900*, edited by Anthony Reid, pp. 57–81. Basingstoke and London: Macmillan Press.

Sugihara Kaoru 杉原　薫. 2009. The Resurgence of Intra-Asian Trade, 1800–1850. In *How India Clothed the World: The World of South Asian Textiles, 1500–1850*, edited by Giorgio Riello and Tirthankar Roy (with collaboration of Om Prakash and Kaoru Sugihara), pp. 139–169. Leiden: Brill.

————, ed. 2005. *Japan, China and the Growth of the Asian International Economy, 1850–1949*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

————. 1996. *Ajia-kan Boeki no Keisei to Kozo* アジア間貿易の形成と構造 [Formation and structure of intra-Asian trade]. Kyoto: Mineruva Shobo.

————. 1985. Ajia-kan Boeki no Keisei to Kozo アジア間貿易の形成と構造 [Formation and structure of intra-Asian trade]. *Shakai Keizai Shigaku* 社会経済史学 [Socio-economic history] 51(1): 17–53.

The Role of Singapore in the Growth of Intra-Southeast Asian Trade, c.1820s–1852

Atsushi Kobayashi*

This paper argues that the expansion of Southeast Asian trade in the first half of the nineteenth century was based partly on the growth of intra-regional trade. Singapore played a significant role as a British free port in the connection between Western long-distance trade and intra-regional trade.

According to my estimates, intra-regional trade centered on the British and Dutch colonies grew from the 1820s to 1852, with the focus shifting from Java to Singapore. As background to this growth, attention is drawn to the relaxation of Dutch protectionist tariffs imposed on British cotton goods imported via Singapore. Prompted by British diplomatic protests, tariff levels were reduced, and Singapore increased its exports of European cotton goods across the region. The importance of the distribution system for regional products in the rise of trade in Singapore is also discussed. As Southeast Asian products exported to the Asian market were traded through Singapore, local merchants such as the Chinese and Bugis often conducted transactions of those regional products in exchange for European cotton goods. Thus, the distribution system for regional products facilitated the influx of European cotton goods into the region via Singapore.

Keywords: Southeast Asian trade, intra-regional trade, Singapore, European cotton goods, Southeast Asian products, Asian merchants

Introduction

In a new commercial wave during the first half of the nineteenth century, the expansion of British trade surged over Southeast Asia. The establishment of Singapore as a British free port in 1819 by Thomas Stamford Raffles of the East India Company contributed to the British advance on China (Greenberg 1951) and the increase of British influence in Southeast Asian trade (SarDesai 1977) during the nineteenth century. The purpose of this paper is to examine the patterns connecting regional trade with Western long-distance trade in Southeast Asia during the second quarter of the century, focusing on

* 小林篤史, Graduate School of Asian and African Area Studies, Kyoto University, 46 Shimoadchi-cho, Yoshida Sakyo-ku, Kyoto 606-8501, Japan
e-mail: greysh-black.zg14@hotmail.co.jp

the role of Singapore in the growth of intra-Southeast Asian trade.

Challenging the traditional historiography, recent studies have shown a resurgence in Asia's long-distance trade and intra-Asian trade in the first half of the nineteenth century. Kaoru Sugihara (2009) criticizes traditional historiography for emphasizing the central importance of the opium triangle, and statistically demonstrates the existence of multilateral trading networks within Asia, not confined to the opium triangle. Moreover, intra-Asian trade composed mostly of necessities grew during this period. As background to this growth, Sugihara argues that local Asian merchants could take advantage of the new commercial opportunities that emerged as a result of the deregulation of trade by the British and Dutch East India Companies and the Chinese Qing government after the late eighteenth century.

Anthony Reid (1997) confronts the tendency to assume that commerce had been stagnant during the era between the end of the "age of commerce" in the second half of the seventeenth century and the growth of export economies under colonial rule in the late nineteenth century. Through an analysis of trade data of Southeast Asian exports from the 1760s to the 1840s, he finds that exports of major commodities from Southeast Asia enjoyed high growth rates during the late eighteenth century and the first half of the nineteenth century rather than during the high colonial period. Furthermore, as background to the expansion of commerce in this period, Reid (Reid and Fernando 1996) remarks that Asian traders, such as the Malays and Chinese, activated local trade in the face of the collapse of the monopoly of the Dutch East India Company and the lifting of maritime bans by the Chinese Qing government.

The studies by Sugihara and Reid serve to justify a reconsideration of the integration of Asian countries into the world economy in the nineteenth century. They criticize the fact that traditional historiography has placed emphasis on the impact of Western influence in Asia, and suggest that we inquire into the possible ways in which the reorganization of market institutions, the revitalization of merchants' activities, and changes in the mode of production in Asia from the late eighteenth century to the first half of the nineteenth century facilitated the expansion of Western long-distance trade in Asia. From both studies emerges a new perspective that the patterns of regional response to Western trade in Asia during this period may have influenced the course of integration of Asian regions into the world economy after the second half of the nineteenth century, with a further progress of international division of labor.

Previous studies discussing the integration of Southeast Asia into the world economy in the nineteenth century, as Reid points out, have shown a tendency to assume that Southeast Asian trade was stagnant before 1850. In general, those studies before the early 1990s use statistics published by the colonial authorities in the late nineteenth

century and examine the increase in primary product exports from individual countries under colonial rule (Cowan 1964; Maddison and Prince 1989; Booth 1991). Therefore, they assume, without a serious examination, that economic life in most parts of the region during the era when Western colonialism had not penetrated thoroughly and few statistical accounts are available, was based on agricultural activities as the chief means of subsistence (Thee 1989, 134–135; Booth 1991, 20). In contrast to this prevailing view, studies came out after the 1990s that discuss the boost in Southeast Asian trade in the first half of the nineteenth century from a new point of view (Reid 1997; Lindblad 2002; Li 2004a). Those studies place importance on the role of British free ports—Singapore and Penang—in connecting the region with Western long-distance trade, by highlighting the lively regional trade between these hubs and surrounding regions. In other words, it is suggested that the perspective of "intra-regional trade" across the framework of Western colonialism is effective in considering the expansion of Southeast Asian trade during this period. However, no study has discussed comprehensively the role of intra-regional trade in the expansion of Southeast Asian trade.

In light of these studies, this paper statistically demonstrates that intra-regional trade centered on British and Dutch colonies grew from the 1820s to the early 1850s. We see that the growth of intra-regional trade was partly affected by the Dutch protectionist tariff policy against British cotton goods based on the regional division of the Anglo-Dutch Treaty of 1824. In addition, we find that multilateral trade relationships were formed in Singapore, in which Chinese middlemen played a central role through the reorganization of the distribution system of regional products, facilitating the distribution of European cotton across the region. In conclusion, it is argued that the combination of the new Western commercial wave and traditional trade flows brought about the growth of intra-regional trade and was the leading factor in the expansion of Southeast Asian trade in the first half of the nineteenth century.

The next section reviews what previous studies have said about Southeast Asian trade, focusing on local (intra-regional) trade, the inflow of European cotton goods, and the distribution of "Asian market-oriented" regional products. The third section defines the concept of intra-regional trade based on trade statistics and demonstrates the growth of intra-regional trade centered on the British and Dutch colonies from the 1820s. In the fourth section, we discuss the institutional basis for the growth of intra-regional trade by examining the development of British and Dutch tariff policies. In the latter part of this paper, we focus on Singaporean trade and shed light on the composition of commodities and merchants' activities, revealing not only the importance of European cotton goods but also the role of various regional products in the growth of Singapore's intra-regional trade.

Review of Literature

This section reviews previous studies dealing with the early-modern Southeast Asian trade in terms of local (intra-regional) trade, the influx of European cotton goods, and traditional circulations of regional products, in order to clarify the points of discussion in the following sections.

Some previous studies have examined the significance of trade within Southeast Asia, which is called "intra-regional trade" in this paper, in the first half of the nineteenth century. It is well recognized that the establishment of Singapore influenced the reorganization of regional trade structures. There is an important study by Wong Lin Ken (1960) that discusses comprehensively the trade of Singapore from 1819 to 1869. Relying on this work, Thomas Lindblad (2002) points out that we need to pay attention to the role of trade in Singapore in order to examine trade of the Outer Islands, which include the Malay Archipelago under Dutch influence apart from Java and Madura. He observes that the Outer Islands had close trade relationships with Singapore after the 1820s, and that such regional trade was conducted by traditional commercial networks such as those of the Bugis, Chinese, Minangkabau, and so on. In addition, some scholars discuss the connection of mainland Southeast Asia, especially the Gulf of Siam area, with Singapore. In the second half of the eighteenth century, the lower Mekong region became the commercial frontier. Chinese immigrants and merchants flowed into the area, largely influenced by the economic growth of China (Cooke and Li 2004). The regional trade route and system formed during that period were partly reorganized by connecting Singapore with the expansion of the distribution of Western-influenced products, such as opium and British cotton goods, in the region (Reid 2004, 30–32; Li 2004b, 78–79). Accordingly, these previous studies suggest that "intra-regional trade centered on Singapore" was one of the important ways for the whole region to connect with Western trade in this era. Therefore, first we need to investigate the volume and trend of this regional trade through a statistical analysis, in order to figure out its precise significance for the boost in Southeast Asian trade. In a statistical analysis of intra-regional trade, we use trade statistics not only for Singapore but also for other British colonial ports and Dutch Java, because we assume that those colonial ports provided the region with a connection to Western long-distance trade as well as Singapore. Through the combined use of colonial trade statistics in this way, we can understand the quantitative importance of intra-regional trade for the expansion of Southeast Asian trade for the first time.

Second, there are studies (Wright 1961; Reid 2009) considering the influx of European cotton goods as a new commodity into the region from the second decade of the nineteenth century. In those studies, it is mentioned that European cotton goods replaced

Indian cotton, which had been a staple since the sixteenth century. Above all, it is worth paying attention to the argument over the Dutch protectionist tariff policies against-British cotton goods in Dutch Java. Alfons van der Kraan (1998) describes how the Netherlands attempted to drive out British cotton goods from Java to corner the market for the domestic cotton industry. According to his argument, the Netherlands levied high tariffs on imports of British cotton into the Dutch possessions. Further discriminatory tariffs were imposed on imports of British cotton via Singapore, because of Singapore's entrepôt function of distributing British cotton goods across the region. As a result, Dutch cotton goods, backed by industrialization at home, took a commanding share in the market for cotton textiles in Java. Studies such as the above suggest that parts of Southeast Asia were exposed to the competition among European states after the Napoleonic Wars, and that the resurgence of Southeast Asian trade during this period was due partly to the impact of Western industrialization. Nevertheless, the influence of the high Dutch tariff on intra-regional trade—particularly trade between Singapore and islands under Dutch influence, other than Java and Madura—has not been discussed in detail. We can therefore neither evaluate the function of Singapore in the influx of European cotton goods nor figure out comprehensively the impact of cotton-manufactured goods on the expansion of Southeast Asian trade. The fourth section attempts to fill this gap.

In addition to cotton goods, we pay attention to the role of the distribution of regional products in the growth of intra-regional trade. Eric Tagliacozzo (2004) pays attention to exports of Southeast Asian marine goods to China during 1780–1860 and discusses the role of Singapore as an entrepôt for such products imported from surrounding islands and exported to China. In Penang and Singapore, Western traders took advantage of the distribution of regional products to access the Chinese market and obtained tea and silk for the West. Jennifer Cushman (1993) studies Siamese trade in the late eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries and shows that exports from Siam were composed mostly of various bulky (low value per unit of weight) goods, especially for the Chinese market. She observes how some of those exports went to Singapore in exchange for British and Indian cotton piece goods, indicating the involvement of Singapore in traditional commodity flows. These arguments show the role that the British colonial port of Singapore played in the flow of regional products in Asian markets, suggesting that a combination of traditional circulation and Western advance boosted Southeast Asian trade during this period. How, specifically, did these regional products and European cotton goods representing the Western advance relate to each other? Without clarifying this point, we cannot sufficiently figure out the role of the distribution of regional products in the Western advance. The fifth section demonstrates that the distribution of Asian market-oriented products in Singapore facilitated the influx of European cotton goods into the region.

The Growth of Intra-regional Trade from the 1820s to 1852

Statistical Approach to Southeast Asian Trade

This section defines the concept of Southeast Asian trade on the basis of the trade statistics of Western colonies. As far as Southeast Asia is concerned, the trade statistics of Dutch Java and the British Straits Settlements (Penang, Malacca, and Singapore) are the most important available sources, and these four colonies seem to have occupied the largest part of Western long-distance trade in Southeast Asia during this period.[1] Therefore, we focus on the trade of British and Dutch colonies and define "intra-regional trade centered on British and Dutch colonies" from trade statistics. First, we look at the coverage of trade statistics and trade structures for British and Dutch colonies from the 1820s to 1852.

Table 1 shows exports from British and Dutch colonies to each regional division, classified as intra-regional (exports to "Southeast Asia" as today's geographical unit), to Asia (exports to Asia other than Southeast Asia), and to the West (exports to Europe and America) from 1828 to 1852. In those days, the most common currency in Southeast Asia was the Spanish dollar, a silver coin from the American continent, so other units of account have been converted to this denomination throughout the paper.[2] As for the period for which trade statistics are available, we can use the data for exports from Singapore to individual places from 1823, and those for Java from 1825, while the first years for Penang and Malacca are 1828 and 1836 respectively. After 1843, trade statistics for all four ports are available. The year 1852 is chosen as the final year in this table because the trade of Java and the Straits Settlements increased drastically afterward. It follows that 1852 is the final year showing the tendency and structure of trade in the first half of the nineteenth century. The year 1844 is set as the middle year between 1836 and 1852. In the following statistical analysis, the four years 1828, 1836, 1844, and 1852 are referred to as benchmark years. In addition, because the trade statistics of Penang and Malacca before 1843 do not distinguish between merchandise and treasure (bullion and coin) in trade value, the trade of the four colonies is shown as a combined value that includes both.

From Table 1, we can see the trade structure of each colony. First, Dutch Java was occupied by Britain in 1811 in the midst of the disorder arising from the Napoleonic Wars.

1) There are other statistical sources available: for Java's coastal trade, see Ryuto Shimada's paper; and for the trade of the Dutch Outer Islands, see Atsushi Ota's paper—both in this focus.

2) Exchange rates are 1 Spanish dollar=2.1085 sicca rupees (1820s), 2.245 company rupees (1830–50s), 2.65 Dutch East Indies guilders (1820s), 2.55 guilders (1830–50s) (Cowan 1950, 21; Wong 1960, 8).

Table 1 Exports of British and Dutch Colonies to Each Region (Spanish Dollars)

		1828		1836		1844		1852	
Java	intra-region	1,876,120	28%	2,640,127	16%	4,395,598	16%	3,355,830	15%
	to Asia	887,912	13%	1,458,124	9%	1,534,223	6%	476,781	2%
	to West	303,066	5%	1,385,631	9%	2,350,515	9%	1,823,972	8%
	to Netherlands	3,546,615	54%	10,679,446	66%	19,204,218	70%	16,957,859	75%
	Total	6,613,713	100%	16,163,328	100%	27,484,554	100%	22,614,442	100%
Singapore	intra-region	2,906,387	34%	3,582,534	46%	3,680,709	35%	5,665,618	42%
	to Asia	2,363,285	28%	2,701,124	35%	5,126,008	49%	4,495,051	33%
	to West	3,323,503	39%	1,523,239	20%	1,681,364	16%	3,313,425	25%
	Total	8,593,175	100%	7,806,897	100%	10,488,081	100%	13,474,094	100%
Penang	intra-region	1,380,213	61%	1,449,349	58%	987,548	45%	2,503,288	58%
	to Asia	860,462	38%	741,527	30%	829,580	38%	925,727	22%
	to West	24,016	1%	299,147	12%	373,398	17%	854,213	20%
	Total	2,264,691	100%	2,490,023	100%	2,190,526	100%	4,283,228	100%
Malacca	intra-region	276,093	77%	236,267	98%	299,282	89%	953,126	98%
	to Asia	83,752	23%	4,951	2%	23,176	7%	17,893	2%
	to West	–	–	–	–	12,963	4%	–	–
	Total	359,845	100%	241,218	100%	335,421	100%	971,019	100%

Sources: Java (De Bruijn Kops 1857; 1858), Singapore (*Tabular Statements, Singapore*), Penang (1828: *SSFR,* G/34/162; 1836: *SSR,* V7; 1844 and 1852: *Tabular Statements, Penang*), Malacca (1828: *SSFR,* G/34/162; 1836: *SSR,* V7; 1844 and 1852: *Tabular Statements, Malacca*).

After five years of British rule, Dutch rule resumed in 1816, and the entire island became a Dutch possession after the Java War (1825–30). The trade statistics for Dutch Java (De Bruijn Kops 1857; 1858) used in this paper are the aggregation of trade of all Dutch ports located in Java and Madura. Trade within Java and Madura is excluded from these statistics. According to Table 1, exports from Java to the Netherlands shows the volume to have been of substantial size, due to the increase in exports of coffee and sugar by the Dutch-controlled Cultivation System in Java from the early 1830s. Nevertheless, intra-regional exports maintained a constant share, above 15 percent, during this period.

Next, trade statistics for Singapore (*Tabular Statements, Singapore*) were published by the missionary press and the Bengal colonial government.[3] In the trade structure of Singapore, exports to Western countries had the largest share, nearly 40 percent in 1828; but after that date, intra-regional exports and exports to Asia became greater. Intra-regional exports stayed at 30–40 percent, and their absolute value increased steadily during this period.

Founded in 1786 by the British on islands along the west coast of the Malay Penin-

3) The government of the Straits Settlements was downgraded from a presidency, one administrative unit of the British East India Company, to a residency under the Bengal Presidency in 1830.

sula, Penang soon became the hub of the "country trade." The year 1826 saw the establishment of the Straits Settlements, headquartered in Penang. The Bengal colonial government published the trade statistics for Penang (*Tabular Statements, Penang*) after 1843. From Table 1, we see that exports from Penang increased in the second half of the 1840s, and more often than not, Penang's intra-regional exports constituted nearly 60 percent.

Malacca became a British port under the Anglo-Dutch Treaty of 1824, and it was integrated into the Straits Settlements in 1826. The Bengal administration officially published trade statistics for Malacca (*Tabular Statements, Malacca*) from 1843. According to Table 1, the volume of Malaccan trade was small compared to the trade of other colonies, and the destinations of Malaccan exports were mostly intra-regional.

An important caveat on the combined use of trade statistics of British and Dutch colonies is that there is a difference of four months in the coverage of annual returns between them: Javanese annual trade statistics adopt the calendar year (January to December), whereas the statistics of the Straits Settlements adopt the official year (May to April). Although this makes it difficult to compare numerical values in detail or to analyze the seasonality of trade, it is still possible to examine the rough structure and general trends of trade by a combined use of trade statistics for the four colonies. In the following, the four sets of trade statistics are aggregated as they are for the quantitative analysis of Southeast Asian trade.

Fig. 1 shows the participants in Southeast Asian trade in the British and Dutch colonies, as well as the size of trade in each location. The trade values (imports and exports), which are circled in the figure, are an aggregate of the values of the four benchmark years in Table 1. Places that are difficult to identify consistently and which show relatively small trade values are excluded from the figure.[4] We can see that the main participants in trade were Burma, Siam, and Cochinchina on the mainland, and Manila, the Malay Peninsula, Riau, Borneo, Sumatra, Celebes, the Moluccas, and Bali in insular Southeast Asia.

Fig. 2 is a conceptual diagram of intra-regional trade centered on British and Dutch colonies, designed to show the ways in which the volume of intra-regional trade was calculated. In this figure, trade relations among the four Western colonies are placed in the center, and the trade relationships with places appearing in Fig. 1 are indicated with arrows. Manila, the Moluccas, and Cochinchina, which show small trade values and little

4) Places excluded are "Neighbouring islands" in the trade statistics of the Straits Settlements, and "Biliton," "Kokos-Eilanden" (Cocos Islands), "Sandelhout Eiland en Flores" (Sumba Island and Flores), "Timor Delie" (Timor Dili), and "Timor Koepang" (Timor Kupang) in the trade statistics of Dutch Java.

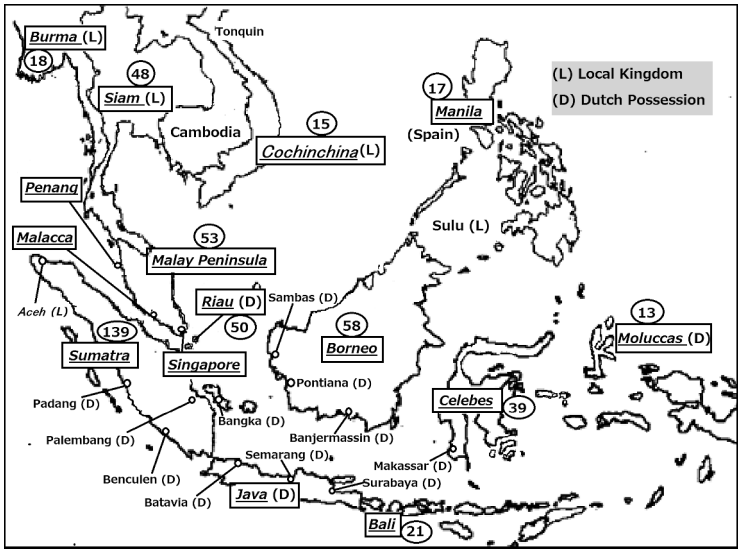


Fig. 1 Southeast Asia in the First Half of the Nineteenth Century (100,000 Spanish Dollars)
Sources: This map was made by the author on the basis of the map in Moor (1837). The trade data were taken from Table 1.
Note: Burma Konbaung Dynasty has ceded Arracan and Tenasserim provinces to Britain in 1826.

change, are grouped together as "Others." In this diagram, the position of each place does not indicate the geographical location as indicated in Fig. 1. All arrows appearing in this figure indicate intra-regional trade. In other words, this diagram does not include such regional trade as trade between islands (for instance, Borneo and Celebes), the coastal trade of each location, or trade between port and hinterland via river. Thus, the coverage of intra-regional trade centered on British and Dutch colonies is limited to seaborne trade between the four Western colonies and the principal Southeast Asian locations.

In Fig. 2, trade among the Straits Settlements is excluded to avoid a double counting of major commodities contributing to the growth of intra-regional trade. As is discussed later, the growth in intra-regional trade was based in part on opium and cotton piece goods, and those commodities accounted for a large part of the trade among the Straits Settlements. If we were to include trade among the Straits Settlements, trade in one article would be counted twice because this trade was composed mostly of entrepôt trade. For instance, cotton piece goods imported from Britain to Singapore were (1) exported to Penang and then (2) reexported from Penang to Sumatra. It follows that there is a double counting in the export and reexport of cotton piece goods in intra-regional trade. Although there would have been commodities consumed in the Straits Settlements, it can be assumed that a double counting of those major commodities would prevent the

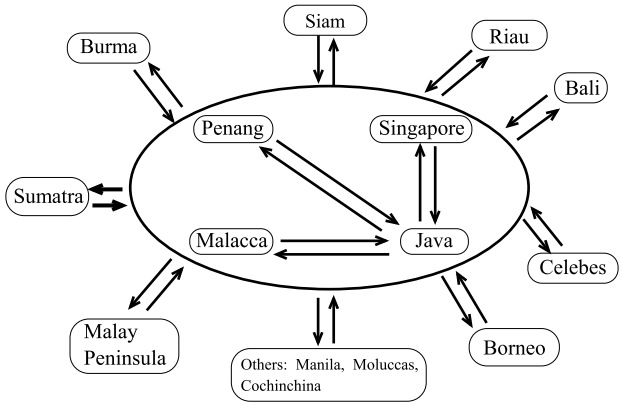


Fig. 2 Conceptual Diagram of Intra-regional Trade Centered on British and Dutch Colonies

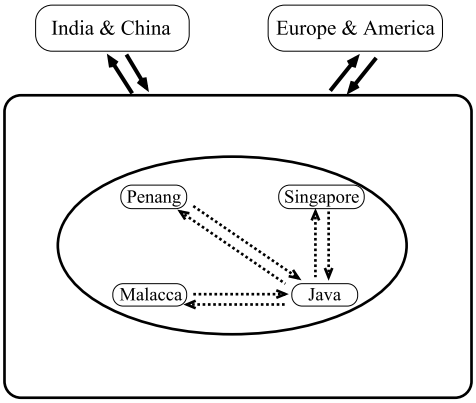


Fig. 3 Conceptual Diagram of Trade with Asia and with the West Centered on British and Dutch Colonies

accurate estimation of intra-regional trade. Therefore, trade among the Straits Settlements has not been included in this conceptual diagram.

Fig. 3 is a conceptual diagram of trade with Asia and with the West centered on British and Dutch colonies. The left arrows with solid lines show the trade of British and Dutch colonies with India and China, representing "trade with Asia."[5] Likewise, the

5) For trade with Asia, we can consult the trade statistics of British India for the trade of Burma, Sumatra, and Manila with Indian ports (Bengal, Madras, and Bombay). Even if we add those trade values to "trade with Asia," however, the share of the British and Dutch colonies of the total value turns out to be over 80 percent. Thus, the share of the British and Dutch colonies in "trade with Asia" is of central importance for the statistical analysis of Southeast Asia's trade with other parts of Asia.

right arrows with solid lines represent "trade with the West" (Europe and America) centered on British and Dutch colonies. These do not represent the entire Southeast Asian trade with Asia and the West but only the trade of British and Dutch colonies with these regions. Accordingly, in Fig. 3, four colonies are set inside the box representing Southeast Asia.

Estimation of Southeast Asian Trade from 1828 to 1852

Let us now calculate the value of intra-regional trade, trade with Asia, and trade with the West as defined above. In order to obtain the sum of intra-regional trade, while we use only export figures to calculate the trade between the four colonies and their Southeast Asian trade counterparts, we need to use both export and import figures. Thus, we need to convert import values to an export-price basis by deflating 7 percent from import values, as an approximate percentage, representing the difference between F.O.B. (Free on Board) and C.I.F. (Cost, Insurance, and Freight) values (see Sugihara 2009, 144). For trade with Asia and trade with the West, we take both export and import figures from the trade statistics for the British and Dutch colonies. Fig. 4 shows the calculated results.

In Fig. 4, trade with the West is calculated, separating Java's trade with the Netherlands as an independent branch of trade because its value was too large to aggregate. Java's trade with the Netherlands soared from approximately 5 million dollars in 1828 to above 20 million dollars in 1852. In addition, trade with the West increased gradually from about 5 million to 10 million dollars. In contrast, trade with Asia fluctuated but remained at around 10 million dollars during this period. Intra-regional trade increased from approximately 8 million to 16 million dollars during this period. It follows that there was a growth in intra-regional trade from the 1820s to 1852 because there were no remarkable price rises or any significant inflation in the region at the time (Lindblad 2002, 92). Furthermore, from Fig. 4 we can see that intra-regional trade maintained a larger volume than trade with the West and exceeded trade with Asia during this period. Although it is worth noting the rapid increase in Java's trade with the Netherlands under the Dutch-controlled Cultivation System, intra-regional trade also showed remarkable growth. It may be assumed that Western merchants found it more difficult to join in intra-regional trade than trade with Asia and the West, because it must have been difficult for them to obtain competitive knowledge about commercial customs, navigation routes, and vernaculars. Thus, the growth in intra-regional trade seems to have been based largely on the activities of local merchants.

From Fig. 5, showing the intra-regional trade of individual colonies, we can see that the trade values of Java and Singapore were considerably larger than those of Penang and Malacca, and that these trade values increased on a similar scale from 1828 to 1840.

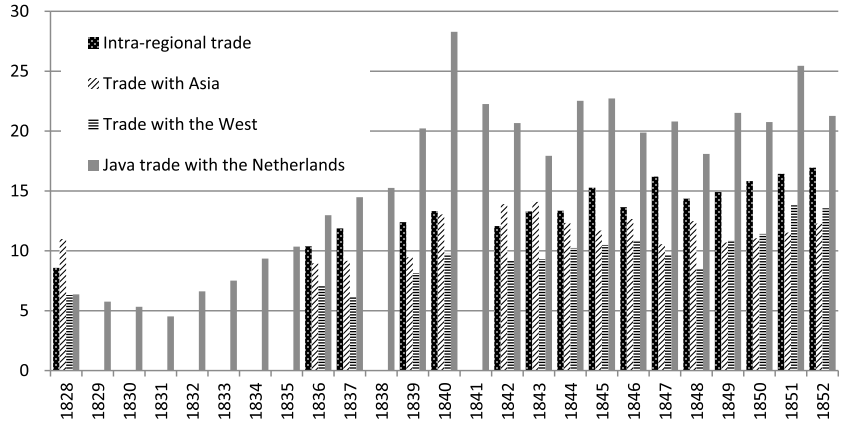


Fig. 4 Intra-regional Trade, Trade with Asia, Trade with the West, and Java Trade with the Netherlands (Million Spanish Dollars)

Sources: See Table 1, and Penang (1837: *SSR,* V7; 1839 and 1840: *SSR,* V8; after 1842: *Tabular Statements, Penang*), Malacca (1837: *SSR,* V7; 1839 and 1840: *SSR,* V8; after 1842: *Tabular Statements, Malacca*).

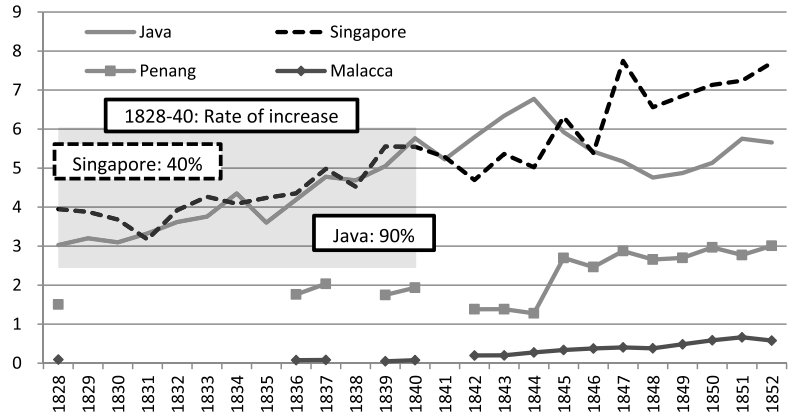


Fig. 5 Intra-regional Trade of British and Dutch Colonies (Million Spanish Dollars)

Source: See Fig. 4.

During this period, Singapore's intra-regional trade increased 40 percent and Java's 90 percent. After 1840, while Singapore appeared to be stagnant from 1839 to 1846, Java's intra-regional trade increased until 1844. Java then saw a decline in its intra-regional trade after 1844, whereas trade of the Straits Settlements increased. From 1828 to 1844, Java was vitally important for the growth of intra-regional trade, although Singapore increased its trade as well. The Straits Settlements, particularly Singapore, played a

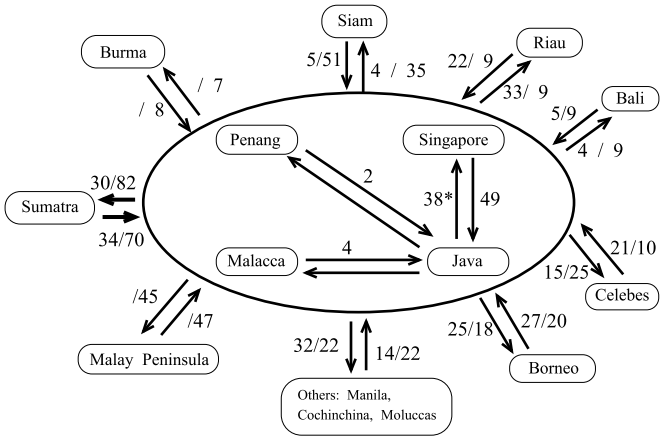


Fig. 6 Intra-regional Trade in 1828 (10,000 Spanish Dollars)

Source: See Table 1.

Notes: Import and export values of each region outside the large central circle are shown in two figures, distinguishing trade with Java and trade with the Straits Settlements wherever possible. Thus Sumatra's imports, for example, are shown as 30/82, indicating that it imported 300,000 dollars from Java and 820,000 dollars from the Straits Settlements, while exports are shown as 34/70, similarly indicating values for two destinations.

* Exports from Java to Singapore include exports to Penang and Malacca.

central role in the growth of intra-regional trade from 1845 to 1852.

Let us now look at changes in the regional structure of intra-regional trade to see the changes in trade relationships. Figs. 6 to 9 show the trade values of each place in intra-regional trade for 1828, 1836, 1844, and 1852. First, we can see that the trade values between Dutch Java and the Straits Settlements in the central circle did not show any tendency to increase throughout these years, although there was a temporary increase in 1844. Therefore, the growth of intra-regional trade during this period is not attributable to the expansion of trade between British and Dutch colonies. According to Figs. 6 and 7, Dutch Java increased its trade with Sumatra, Borneo, and Bali from 1828 to 1836, while the change in the volume of trade was small for the Straits Settlements during this period. A comparison between Figs. 7 and 8 suggests that Dutch Java boosted trade with Sumatra and Borneo from 1836 to 1844 and that exports to Riau increased as well. The Straits Settlements could not expand trade with places in the archipelago, although its trade with Burma and the Malay Peninsula increased slightly during this period. When comparing Figs. 8 and 9, we see an increase in the Straits Settlements' trade from 1844 to 1852, and that the geographical expansion of its trade reached the whole of Southeast Asia. Specifically, trade with Siam and Burma on the mainland increased rapidly, as did trade with the neighboring Malay Peninsula and Sumatra and

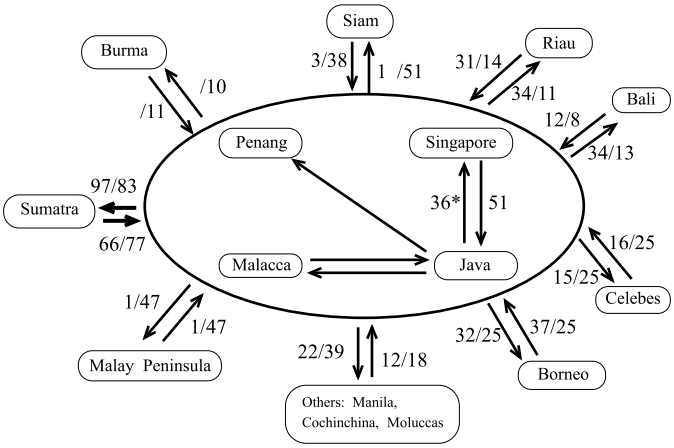


Fig. 7 Intra-regional Trade in 1836 (10,000 Spanish Dollars)

Source: See Table 1.
Note: See Fig. 6.

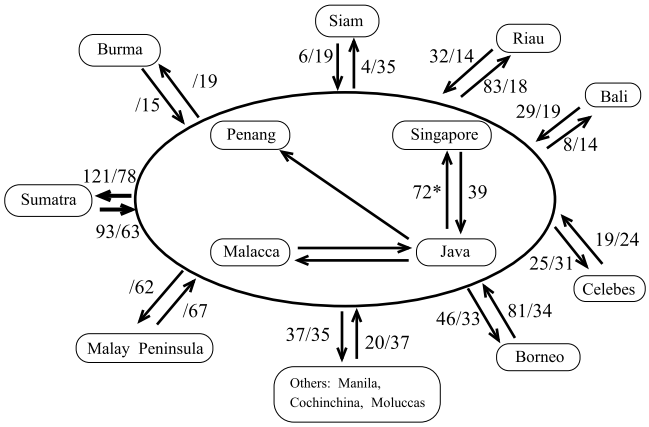


Fig. 8 Intra-regional Trade 1844 (10,000 Spanish Dollars)

Source: See Table 1.
Note: See Fig. 6.

the eastern islands of Celebes and Borneo. In other words, from 1828 to 1844 Dutch Java expanded its intra-regional trade with the archipelago under Dutch influence; and afterward the Straits Settlements, with Singapore at the head, extended trade relationships to the whole region, including the Dutch sphere of influence. This resulted in the growth of intra-regional trade, with a shift in focus from Java to Singapore.

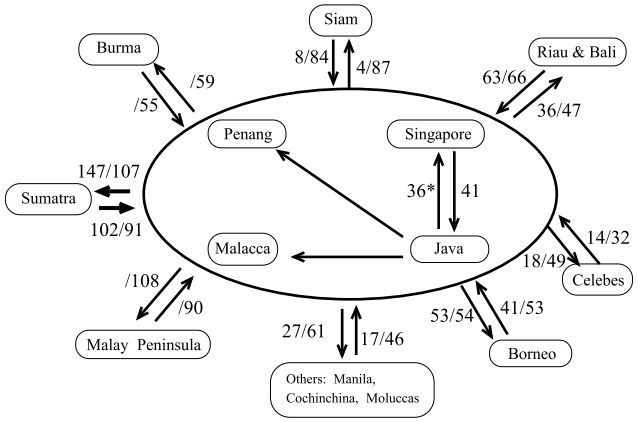


Fig. 9 Intra-regional Trade 1852 (10,000 Spanish Dollars)

Source: See Table 1.

Note: See Fig. 6. After 1847, trade with Riau and Bali cannot be distinguished in trade statistics of Singapore; therefore, they are together in this figure.

The Development of British and Dutch Tariff Policies

This section discusses the development of British and Dutch tariff policies in order to comprehend the background of the growth of intra-regional trade. The Anglo-Dutch Treaty, concluded in March 1824, fixed British and Dutch spheres of influence in Southeast Asia, with a powerful influence on intra-regional trade.

The United Kingdom, possessing a sphere of influence north of the Malacca Straits, increased its political and economic influence in Southeast Asia through the establishment of the Straits Settlements—Penang, Malacca, and Singapore—as the basis of its activities (Webster 1998, Chapter 4). Its main driving force was the interests of British industry and commerce, vitalized by the Industrial Revolution, particularly the cotton industry. With the adoption of free trade policies, the Straits Settlements prospered as hubs for Asian traders who imported regional products and exported cotton goods to surrounding ports. Straits Settlements merchants, who earned profits from the distribution of cotton goods, were eager to support the policy of free trade (Webster 2011).

Meanwhile, the Netherlands, possessing a sphere of influence south of the Malacca Straits, had been pursuing the colonization of Java since 1816 and constructing a modern nation at home with the enormous wealth drawn from its colony. After the Napoleonic Wars, the addition of Flanders to the new nation of the United Kingdom of the Netherlands was approved by the Vienna Protocol in 1816. The Netherlands adopted protectionist policies in its colonies to guarantee the interests of the flourishing domestic Flemish

cotton industry (Van der Kraan 1998, 18–21), while adopting free trade policies at home to accommodate the interests of the entrepôt trade of Amsterdam (Wright 1955, 154–155). This tariff policy imposed over the area of Dutch influence became a barrier against the inflow of British cotton goods.

The starting point for Dutch cotton tariffs was the Textile Ordinance decreed by the Netherlands government in February 1824, setting a high tariff rate against British cotton goods (BPP 1840, 13). The Javanese cloth market had been overwhelmed by British cotton goods until the return of Java to the Dutch in 1816. Afterward, in order to maintain the market for the Flemish cotton industry, the Netherlands imposed an import duty of 25 percent on foreign European cotton goods, especially targeting British goods shipped directly from Britain, and 35 percent if they came via an Asian port—the latter was generally the case because British cotton goods were usually imported via Calcutta or Singapore. This high tariff had the desired effect: the influx of British cotton goods into Java diminished, while imports of Belgian goods, which bore no duty, increased in their share of cotton goods imported into Java—from 2.5 percent in 1823 to 70 percent in 1829 (Muller 1857, 84–91; Posthumus 1921, 90–93).

The British government made diplomatic protests against this Dutch protectionism on the basis of Article 2 of the Anglo-Dutch Treaty of 1824 (BPP 1840, 2–3). According to this treaty, the two nations had agreed to the following: the vessels of one nation entering a port in the Eastern Seas belonging to the other nation would not pay more than double the duty on the vessels of the nation that controlled the port, and if no duty was imposed on the vessels of that nation, the charge on the vessels of the other nation would not exceed 6 percent. In other words, the imposition of high tariffs of 25 percent and 35 percent on British cotton goods was in complete violation of the treaty, because there were no duties on Dutch cotton goods in any Dutch colony. In response to Britain's protests, the Netherlands insisted that the Anglo-Dutch Treaty was concerned with the nationality of ships and did not make stipulations regarding the origin of products (Posthumus 1921, 262–263, 448), and generally, high tariffs were maintained throughout the 1820s.

The British government's protests were in the interests of two parties: British merchants who exported cotton goods directly from Britain to Southeast Asia and whose main target was Java, and local British merchants based in the Straits Settlements who could benefit from the reexport of British cotton goods to surrounding regions. Since British diplomatic protests were made in defense of different interests, we will deal with each development in turn.

The first group that was served by British protests was British merchants at home. In Java, British cotton goods began to circulate under British rule and maintained a

dominant share among total imports of cotton goods until 1823 (Van der Kraan 1998, 11). The high tariff set by the Textile Ordinance of 1824 reduced the imports of British cotton goods and helped to increase imports of Belgian cotton goods into Java. However, as a result of the secession of Belgium from the Netherlands in 1830, the Netherlands lost the Flemish cotton industry and could no longer export domestic cotton goods to Java; British merchants immediately took advantage of this to increase their exports of cotton goods to Java. For a time, the share of British cotton goods among total imports of cotton goods into Java was above 90 percent (Muller 1857, 84–91; Van der Kraan 1998, 24–25), which led to an optimistic view among British merchants even in the face of the Dutch protectionist policy. As the Dutch government began to nurture the domestic cotton industry in the 1830s, however, the British sensed the urgency of the situation, and protests against Dutch tariffs strengthened after 1833 (BPP 1840, 66–73). In May 1836, the Dutch government gave in and raised the tariff rate on Dutch cotton goods from zero to 12.5 percent, while maintaining the tariff rate of 25 percent on British cotton goods, following Article 2 of the Anglo-Dutch Treaty.[6)]

In addition, in October 1837 the Dutch government reduced the tariff rate of 35 percent on British cotton goods imported via Asian ports to 25 percent, the same as direct imports from Britain (*ibid.*, 187; Posthumus 1921, 485). Nevertheless, these alterations in Dutch tariff policy during the 1830s did not improve the institutional base of intra-regional trade, as we shall see below.

Second, we take up the development of tariff policies based on the interests of British merchants in the Straits Settlements. The British diplomatic protests during the 1830s did not explicitly mention the high tariff of 35 percent imposed on the Straits Settlements because the Netherlands charged the tariff even on Dutch ships importing European cotton goods through the Straits Settlements (BPP 1840, 63). For instance, if a Dutch ship brought Dutch cotton goods from Singapore to a Dutch-ruled port, the ship had to pay a tariff of 35 percent, following Article 2 of the Anglo-Dutch Treaty. In fact, however, there was no need for Dutch cotton goods to go through Singapore.

The commerce of British merchants based in the Straits Settlements who earned profits from reexporting British cotton goods to surrounding areas was severely affected by the Dutch discriminatory tariff, levied not only on Java but also on Dutch-ruled ports located on the west coast of Sumatra, Borneo, and Celebes (Moor 1837, 173–174). Singaporean merchants were eager to plead their case with the home government, publish-

6) In fact, the Netherlands government entered the Secret Textile Contract with the Netherlands Trading Society, importing most Dutch cotton into Java, in which the full amount of 12.5 percent duty was to be refunded in the Netherlands to subsidize the Dutch textile industry (Van der Kraan 1998, 52).

ing protests in newspapers in the 1830s, but in vain (*SC*, May 12, 1825; BPP 1840, 63, 161–162).

To make matters worse for merchants in the Straits Settlements, in 1834 the Dutch government implemented a prohibitive tariff of 70 percent on imports of European cotton goods via the Straits Settlements as a wartime decree during the Belgian Revolution (BPP 1842, 15). Although the Netherlands insisted that this new tariff policy was aimed at driving out Belgian cotton goods from Dutch possessions, in reality imports of British cotton goods into Dutch possessions were levied the prohibitive tariff (*ibid.*, 53–54). Furthermore, in 1834 port regulation was also decreed by the Batavian government, declaring that foreign European cotton goods would not be permitted to enter the Dutch possessions unless they were first imported into the principal ports of Java, limited to Batavia, Semarang, and Surabaya (BPP 1840, 74–75). In other words, exports of cotton goods from Singapore to Dutch possessions in Sumatra, Borneo, and Celebes were completely banned, and this severely damaged the entrepôt function of Singapore. As a result, the amount of British cotton goods imported from the Straits Settlements to the Dutch territory was considerably reduced. The British home government could not judge accurately whether the regulations implemented by the Netherlands for trade in the Dutch possessions were a violation of the Anglo-Dutch Treaty or not, because those decrees were not published in Europe (*ibid.*, 71).

This discriminatory Dutch tariff spurred further complaints from local British merchants, bringing the problem to the top of the British diplomatic priority list in the early 1840s (*SFP*, April 5, 1838; June 20, 1839; July 18, 1839; September 26, 1839; BPP 1842, 2–3, 21, 54). In 1841, Lord Palmerston, the British foreign minister, officially lodged a protest with the Dutch government concerning the discriminatory tariff and the port regulation of 1834; the Dutch government responded immediately, declaring officially that the prohibitively high tariff and the port regulation as a wartime decree had been abolished in October 1839. Thus, by reducing the tariff to 25 percent, per the terms of the Anglo-Dutch Treaty (BPP 1842, 40–43), the institutional basis for trade between the Straits Settlements and Dutch possessions was eventually set right.

Combination of the New Wave and Traditional Circulations

Commodity Compositions of the Intra-regional Trade of Singapore

In this section we focus on the trade of Singapore, because this colonial port played a leading role in the growth of intra-regional trade centered on British and Dutch colonies; this study will shed some light on commodity compositions to reveal the main driving

Table 2 Imports and Exports of Singapore with Siam (Spanish Dollars)

Imports	1828	Imports	1835	Imports	1844	Imports	1852
Sugar	46%	Sugar	49%	Sugar	39%	Sugar	45%
Rice	10%	Rice	19%	Hardware	15%	Sappanwood	13%
Stick-lac	10%	Stick-lac	8%	Sappanwood	10%	Cutlery	7%
Sappanwood	9%	Ironware	5%	Gamboge	5%	Raw silk	6%
Salt	6%	Sappanwood	5%	Salt	5%	Tin	4%
Indian sundries	3%	Oil	4%	Stick-lac	5%	Oil	4%
Nankeens	3%	Salt	3%	Eastern sundries	4%	Rice	4%
Oil	3%	Eastern sundries	3%	Tin	3%	Stick-lac	3%
Tin	3%	Sugar candy	1%	Iron	2%	Hides	3%
Ironware	2%	China ware	1%	Indigo	2%	Sundries	2%
10 items	94%	10 items	98%	10 items	92%	10 items	91%
Total	365,474	Total	233,086	Total	171,905	Total	523,980

Exports	1828	Exports	1835	Exports	1844	Exports	1852
I.C.G.	31%	E.C.G.	33%	E.C.G.	69%	E.C.G.	50%
E.C.G.	30%	I.C.G.	15%	I.C.G.	3%	Opium	26%
Opium	19%	Cotton twist	11%	Cotton twist	3%	I.C.G.	10%
European sundries	4%	Opium	11%	Rice	3%	Cotton twist	8%
Rattan	4%	Rattan	5%	Rattan	3%	Rice	1%
Glassware	2%	Ebony	5%	Arms	3%	Rattan	1%
Indian sundries	2%	Beeswax	5%	Anchors	2%	Arms	0%
Gold dust	2%	Woolens	3%	Opium	2%	Sundries	0%
Woolens	1%	Iron and steel	3%	Woolens	1%	China petty goods	0%
Beeswax	1%	Anchors	1%	Beeswax	1%	Copper sheathing	0%
10 items	97%	10 items	92%	10 items	91%	10 items	98%
Total	284,029	Total	176,791	Total	181,327	Total	503,519

Sources: 1828: *SSFR,* G/34/162, 1835: *SFP,* Aug. 11–Sep. 22, 1836. 1844 and 1852: *Tabular Statements, Singapore*, 1844, 1852.
Notes: E.C.G. (European Cotton Goods), I.C.G. (Indian Cotton Goods), M.C.G. (Malay Cotton Goods).

force for the growth of Singapore's intra-regional trade. Tables 2 to 6 show the commodity compositions of the imports and exports of Singapore with its main intra-regional trade counterparts—Siam, the east coast of the Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Celebes, and Borneo—which accounted for approximately 60–70 percent of the intra-regional trade of Singapore. In these tables, the top 10 items are listed in the four benchmark years listed earlier (1835 has been substituted for 1836 due to a lack of sources).

First, let us look at the commodity composition of imports to see what kind of regional products were brought into Singapore. Generally, each location had a few leading items that took a significant share of the imports into Singapore, such as sugar from Siam; tin or gold dust from the east coast of the Malay Peninsula; coffee or gutta-percha (a sort of resin) from Sumatra; tortoiseshell, Malay cotton goods, or coffee from Celebes;

Table 3 Imports and Exports of Singapore with the East Coast of the Malay Peninsula (Spanish Dollars)

Imports	1828	Imports	1835	Imports	1844	Imports	1852
Tin	43%	Gold dust	58%	Gold dust	61%	Gold dust	39%
Gold dust	33%	Tin	29%	Tin	19%	Tin	28%
Pepper	16%	Pepper	5%	Rattan	4%	Rice	6%
Opium	2%	Sugar	2%	Pepper	3%	Gutta-percha	6%
Nankeens	1%	Rice	1%	Eastern sundries	3%	Hides	3%
Sugar	1%	Hides	1%	Eaglewood	2%	Sappanwood	3%
Stick-lac	1%	Stick-lac	1%	Salt	2%	Eaglewood	2%
Indian sundries	1%	Eastern sundries	1%	M.C.G.	2%	M.C.G.	2%
Salt	1%	Ironware	1%	Hides	1%	Rattan	2%
Rattan	1%	Raw silk	0%	Coffee	1%	Sundries	2%
10 items	98%	10 items	98%	10 items	97%	10 items	92%
Total	309,531	Total	247,612	Total	470,877	Total	516,874

Exports	1828	Exports	1835	Exports	1844	Exports	1852
Opium	62%	Opium	59%	Opium	46%	Opium	42%
Tobacco	10%	Cotton twist	14%	Cotton twist	19%	Cotton twist	22%
I.C.G.	8%	Tobacco	9%	E.C.G.	12%	E.C.G.	15%
Rice	5%	M.C.G.	6%	Tobacco	6%	M.C.G.	5%
E.C.G.	4%	E.C.G.	5%	M.C.G.	4%	Tobacco	4%
Europe sundries	3%	I.C.G.	3%	Rice	4%	Raw silk	2%
M.C.G.	3%	Iron and steel	1%	Raw silk	3%	Rice	2%
Raw silk	1%	Rice	1%	Iron and steel	1%	Iron bars	1%
Indian sundries	1%	Beeswax	1%	I.C.G.	1%	China petty goods	1%
Iron	1%	Indian sundries	0%	China crockery	1%	Ironware	1%
10 items	98%	10 items	99%	10 items	97%	10 items	95%
Total	281,278	Total	284,210	Total	375,500	Total	505,810

Source: See Table 2.
Note: See Table 2. After 1847, the West Coast of the Malay Peninsula is included in the East Coast.

and gold dust from Borneo. Although products demanded in Europe—such as sugar, coffee, and tin—stand out on this list, it is worth noting that some of the leading items were traded for Asian markets. For instance, marine goods such as tortoiseshell, sea cucumber, and pearl shells from Celebes were exported to China via Singapore (Tagliacozzo 2004, 31). After the leading items, various regional products are listed in the tables; they were an important component of imports as a whole. They were primarily preferred by Asian consumers rather than meeting European demand. Presumably, trade in these Asian market-oriented products had been nurtured before the nineteenth century,[7] which suggests that the growth in Singapore trade was not only brought about by European demand but was also based on traditional Asian trade.

7) Previous studies have discussed trade in marine and forest products, such as tortoiseshell (Ptak 1991) and birds' nests (Blussé 1991) in Southeast Asia before the nineteenth century.

Table 4 Imports and Exports of Singapore with Sumatra (Spanish Dollars)

Imports	1828	Imports	1835	Imports	1844	Imports	1852
Coffee	28%	Coffee	34%	Gold dust	18%	Gutta-percha	26%
Rattan	16%	Betelnut	19%	Rattan	15%	Sundries	14%
Tin	11%	Cotton	9%	Betelnut	12%	Rattan	13%
Pepper	9%	Sago	8%	Benjamin	10%	Sago	8%
Rice	7%	Rattan	6%	Sago	10%	Beeswax	7%
Gold dust	4%	Gold dust	4%	Eastern sundries	6%	Betelnut	7%
Spices	4%	Benjamin	3%	Beeswax	4%	Gold dust	5%
Indian sundries	3%	Beeswax	3%	Wooden basins	4%	Elastic gum	5%
Beeswax	3%	Rice	3%	Pepper	3%	Benjamin	3%
Java sundries	3%	Eastern sundries	2%	Rice	3%	Pepper	2%
10 items	88%	10 items	91%	10 items	85%	10 items	90%
Total	205,777	Total	133,232	Total	228,474	Total	259,301

Exports	1828	Exports	1835	Exports	1844	Exports	1852
I.C.G.	51%	I.C.G.	29%	E.C.G.	22%	E.C.G.	41%
E.C.G.	9%	E.C.G.	12%	I.C.G.	20%	M.C.G.	9%
Salt	8%	Raw silk	10%	Opium	11%	Opium	7%
Stick-lac	4%	Opium	9%	China crockery	7%	Rice	6%
M.C.G.	4%	M.C.G.	8%	M.C.G.	6%	I.C.G.	6%
Cotton	4%	China sundries	7%	Raw silk	5%	Raw silk	5%
European sundries	4%	Iron and steel	5%	Salt	4%	Earthenware	3%
Opium	3%	Chinaware	2%	Tobacco	4%	Salt	3%
Small articles	3%	Ironware	2%	Tea	3%	Cotton twist	2%
Raw silk	2%	Arms	2%	Iron and steel	2%	Tobacco	2%
10 items	92%	10 items	86%	10 items	84%	10 items	84%
Total	180,396	Total	131,975	Total	141,259	Total	151,737

Source: See Table 2.
Note: See Table 2.

According to the commodity composition of exports in the tables, cotton goods and opium were the leading items of export from Singapore to the main Southeast Asian locations. Opium took a large share among the exports to the east coast of the Malay Peninsula and Celebes, but less so in exports to Siam, Sumatra, and Borneo. When it comes to the export of cotton goods, the general trend was that European cotton goods replaced Indian cotton during this period, but there was a difference between areas. When it came to exports to the Gulf of Siam (Siam and the east coast of the Malay Peninsula), European cotton goods surpassed Indian cotton by 1835, although the export value of Malay cotton goods was larger than that of European cotton goods to the east coast. On the other hand, the archipelago (Sumatra, Celebes, and Borneo) maintained a constant volume of Indian cotton goods until the middle of the 1840s; European cotton goods overwhelmed Indian cotton in the late 1840s. Presumably, these geographical

Table 5 Imports and Exports of Singapore with Celebes (Spanish Dollars)

Imports	1828	Imports	1835	Imports	1844	Imports	1852
Tortoiseshell	42%	Tortoiseshell	31%	M.C.G	27%	Coffee	30%
M.C.G.	36%	Eastern sundries	16%	Tortoiseshell	22%	M.C.G.	20%
Birds' nests	7%	Gold dust	11%	Sea cucumber	14%	Tortoiseshell	10%
Sea cucumber	4%	Pearl shell	11%	Rice	10%	Gold dust	10%
Iron	3%	Coffee	7%	Pearl shell	9%	Mangrove bark	5%
Coffee	2%	Sea cucumber	6%	Gold dust	6%	Rattan	4%
Rice	1%	Rice	5%	Coffee	4%	Sea cucumber	3%
Gold dust	1%	Birds' nests	5%	Kayou putee oil	3%	Seaweed	3%
Beeswax	1%	Beeswax	3%	Eastern sundries	1%	Rice	2%
Spices	1%	Ebony	1%	Spices	1%	Birds' nests	2%
10 items	97%	10 items	96%	10 items	98%	10 items	90%
Total	189,543	Total	202,073	Total	240,917	Total	312,107

Exports	1828	Exports	1835	Exports	1844	Exports	1852
Opium	38%	Opium	23%	Opium	28%	E.C.G.	34%
I.C.G.	27%	I.C.G.	22%	E.C.G.	22%	Opium	28%
E.C.G.	12%	E.C.G.	16%	Cotton twist	14%	Cotton twist	12%
Raw silk	9%	Cotton twist	14%	I.C.G.	10%	Gambier	5%
Indian sundries	4%	Raw silk	6%	Woolens	5%	I.C.G.	3%
Woolens	3%	Gambier	4%	Gambier	5%	Raw silk	2%
European sundries	1%	Tobacco	2%	Hardware	3%	Ironware	2%
Straits sundries	1%	Woolens	2%	China crockery	3%	Earthenware	2%
Iron	1%	Iron and steel	2%	Rice	2%	Gold dust	1%
Stick-lac	1%	Ironware	2%	M.C.G.	1%	Pepper	1%
10 items	98%	10 items	94%	10 items	93%	10 items	91%
Total	238,062	Total	305,295	Total	278,725	Total	484,618

Source: See Table 2.
Note: See Table 2.

differences can be partly explained by the influence of high Dutch tariffs on imports of British cotton goods into the Dutch-ruled ports of Sumatra, Celebes, and Borneo. Exports of European cotton goods from Singapore to areas under Dutch influence could not expand readily due to the high tariffs. This allowed Indian cotton goods to maintain their dominance in the region, which had endured since the sixteenth century.[8] Consequently, the exports of European cotton goods from Singapore to the archipelago expanded after the lifting of high Dutch tariffs against Singapore in the early 1840s.

In addition, as we can see from the gray-highlighted cells indicating the export of regional products, commodities imported from Southeast Asian locations were reex-

8) The tariff rate on imports of Indian cotton goods in Dutch possessions was 12.5 percent until 1837; afterward, it increased to 25 percent (BPP 1840, 78, 187).

Table 6 Imports and Exports of Singapore with Borneo (Spanish Dollars)

Imports	1828	Imports	1835	Imports	1844	Imports	1852
Gold dust	24%	Gold dust	43%	Gold dust	34%	Gold dust	28%
Rattan	22%	Birds' nests	10%	Rattan	14%	Birds' nests	16%
Birds' nests	15%	Rattan	10%	Antimony ore	9%	Sago	15%
Malay camphor	8%	Antimony ore	8%	Sago	9%	Rattan	12%
Pepper	8%	Pepper	6%	Malay camphor	7%	Gambier	8%
Tortoiseshell	6%	Malay camphor	3%	Birds' nests	5%	Malay camphor	5%
Indian sundries	5%	Sago	3%	Pepper	5%	Sundries	5%
Beeswax	4%	Tortoiseshell	3%	Opium	4%	Precious stone	2%
Eaglewood	2%	Beeswax	3%	Beeswax	3%	Beeswax	1%
Rice	1%	Eastern sundries	2%	Eastern sundries	2%	Mats and bags	1%
10 items	95%	10 items	91%	10 items	91%	10 items	93%
Total	200,283	Total	302,784	Total	351,512	Total	535,452

Exports	1828	Exports	1835	Exports	1844	Exports	1852
I.C.G.	67%	I.C.G.	39%	E.C.G.	31%	E.C.G.	44%
Opium	7%	Opium	26%	I.C.G.	20%	Opium	11%
Nankeens	6%	Nankeens	6%	Opium	16%	Tobacco	7%
Iron	4%	M.C.G.	6%	Tobacco	4%	I.C.G.	6%
Raw silk	3%	E.C.G.	3%	China crockery	3%	Rice	6%
M.C.G.	2%	Rice	3%	Hardware	3%	Brassware	3%
E.C.G.	2%	Iron and steel	2%	Iron and steel	3%	Arms	2%
Indian sundries	2%	Arms	2%	Nankeens	2%	Earthenware	2%
Tobacco	1%	Raw silk	2%	China sundries	2%	Tea	2%
Brass ware	1%	Ironware	2%	Rice	2%	M.C.G.	1%
10 items	96%	10 items	91%	10 items	86%	10 items	84%
Total	163,690	Total	283,266	Total	274,575	Total	453,528

Source: See Table 2.
Note: See Table 2.

ported to intra-regional locations via Singapore. In the case of Siam, forest products, such as rattan and beeswax, produced mainly in tropical forests on islands (Crawfurd 1820, 423, 438), were supplied through Singapore constantly, which means that there was a regional market based on supply and demand in forest goods within the region. Likewise, gambier exported to Celebes was used as a gum for chewing betel, a favorite item among locals, and tobacco produced mainly in Java was consumed across insular Southeast Asia (*ibid.*, 416–417). Ironware (including hardware and cutlery) imported from Siam—the iron industry in northern Siam flourished to meet regional demand in the early nineteenth century (Li 2004b, 78)—was reexported from Singapore throughout insular Southeast Asia. When it comes to the constant export of salt to Sumatra, because the Dutch colonial authorities implemented the monopoly system for salt across the west coast of Sumatra after the 1820s, the Minangkabau, the people of the hinterland, preferred Sia-

mese salt, imported from the east coast of Sumatra via Singapore, to high-priced Java salt (Dobbin 1983, 100–101). In any case, although the trade value of each regional product was tiny compared to the value of cotton piece goods and opium brought from outside the area, the circulation of regional products within the region through Singapore was closely related to the ordinary lives of locals. Presumably, as exports of European cotton goods from Singapore increased, imports of regional products in exchange for them also increased, including reexports not just to the West but also to Asia. Thus, exports of European cotton goods boosted intra-regional trade not only by connecting with Western long-distance trade directly through providing regional products for European demand, but also by promoting the internal distribution of Asian market-oriented products via Singapore.

The Role of Chinese Middlemen in Singapore

This section explores the role of Chinese middlemen in Singapore who intermediated the trade in cotton piece goods between Western merchants and local traders, for the growth of intra-regional trade.

In Singapore, European agency houses were the main importers of cotton goods, and their number increased from 14 in 1827 to 36 in 1855 (Wong 1960, 167). These firms sold European cotton goods as agents of Western firms and exported regional products to the West in return (Lee 1978, 14–15). Agency houses were required to sell European cotton goods to local Asian traders gathering in Singapore and to buy from them regional products for European markets. To undertake this business, European agency houses needed the cooperation of middlemen.

In Singapore, Western—especially British—merchants were unfamiliar with the local Asian way of doing business. Similarly, local traders, such as Malays and Bugis, had less experience in communicating with Western merchants, so Chinese middlemen played an important role as intermediaries between them. Overall, Malacca Chinese, or Baba, who were locally born and capable of speaking English as well as the vernacular, acted as middlemen (Earl 1837, 415).

In those days, although barter trade was common in the Singapore market owing to the scarcity of specie, European agency houses could dispose of cotton goods on a large scale by credit sale and generally issued promissory notes for a two-month credit period to Chinese middlemen who delivered in return not money but regional products (Wong 1960, 163). Credit sale imposed high risks on Western merchants, however, because the merchants loaned their capital to middlemen in advance. In those days, practice did not conform strictly to rules. Promissory notes were taken as payable, nominally, in two to three months' time, but in many instances when the middlemen could not pay back

within the credit period, the credit was actually extended to six months (*SC*, May 22, 1828; Phipps 1835, 269; Wong 1960, 163). For European firms, the collection of capital was unstable, and in the meantime they were exposed to the risk of failure to collect. According to the commercial newspaper in Singapore, Chinese merchants often went back to China without repaying their debts to Western merchants (*SC*, August 13, 1829). Furthermore, the law courts did not work well in preventing debtors from defaulting, although there were trials regarding credit sales (*ibid.*, May 22, 1828; August 12, 1830). In 1827 a law court opened in the Straits Settlements, headquartered in Penang, but only one judge was appointed to court and he was stationed in Penang almost all year long; his trips to Singapore were not regular (Turnbull 1972, 56–57). Under the circumstances, trials in Singapore did not proceed smoothly, and debtors recognized that confiscation of property was not executed properly even if the debt was overdue (Buckley 1902, 239). It is presumed that formal institutions such as a judicial system were inadequate to protect the business of European firms in Singapore. As a result, Chinese merchants serving in administrative positions and possessing property in Singapore were selected as trustworthy middlemen by Western merchants. In this way, Chinese middlemen succeeded in their business in Singapore.

Chinese middlemen in Singapore did not specialize in the intermediary business for European agency houses but dealt in various kinds of products on their own account to meet the demand of local Asian traders. Table 7 shows the commodities handled by Tan Kim Ching and Tan Kim Seng, extracted from the *Straits Times*, which published the lists of merchandise imported and exported by European ships (square-rigged vessels) in Singapore from January to June of 1851. They were famous and wealthy Fujian Chinese of Malaccan background residing in Singapore who performed the role of middlemen for Western merchants (Song 1902, 46, 62, 66, 91–92; Yen 1986, 183–184). From Table 7 we learn that both merchants handled a variety of Southeast Asian products. In addition, the table shows the percentage (by value) of Western products, Indian and Chinese products, and Southeast Asian products handled by each merchant among the imports and exports in Singapore in 1851, calculated from trade statistics of Singapore, adjusting for consistency of products' names. Southeast Asian products listed in Tan Kim Ching's merchandise took up 24 percent of imports and 33 percent of exports in Singapore; those of Tan Kim Seng were 24 percent and 29 percent. These figures are comparable to the shares taken up by Western products and Indian and Chinese products respectively in the trade conducted by both merchants. Presumably, both merchants purchased those regional products from local traders coming to Singapore, as part of their intermediary business. There were, however, articles not only for European markets, such as sugar, tin, and coffee, but also goods for China, such as birds' nest and sea cucumber, and for

Table 7 Commodity Compositions Dealt in by Tan Kim Ching and Tan Kim Seng in 1851

	Tan Kim Ching Co. (14 Imports, 16 Exports)	Tan Kim Seng Co. (21 Imports, 19 Exports)
Western products	Iron, European cotton goods (**2 articles: The percentage in Singapore trade (the official year 1851). Import 17% Export 13%**)	European cotton goods, Glasswares, Maskets, Port wine, Vermicelli, Coir rope, Iron anchors, Iron shots, Gunpowder, Cannister, Iron pans, Flooring tiles, Europe earthenware, Copper doit (**14 articles: Import 21% Export 14%**)
Indian and Chinese products	Bengal rice, Benares opium, Copper cash, Tea, Chairs, Silver coin, Cotton, Malwa opium, Tobacco, Chintz, Tamarind (**11 articles: Import 32% Export 35%**)	Nankeens, Madras chintz, Madras brown salempore, Bengal malls, China tobacco, Safflower, Umbrellas, Water jars, Tea, Benares opium, Raw silk, China crockery, Cotton, Broken silver (**14 articles: Import 32% Export 35%**)
Southeast Asian products	Sugar, Black pepper, Glue, Tin, Rice, Alum, Lakkawood, Timber, Rattan, Ebony, Seaweed, Sea cucumber, Stick-lac, Shark's fin, Fish skin, Mats, Bird's skin and feathers, Birds' nests, Goat skin, Tortoise-shell, Eaglewood, Fish maw, Pearl sago, Gambier, Sappanwood, Gold dust, Cargo rice, Paddy, Betelnut (**29 articles: Import 24% Export 33%**)	Manila segars, Elephant's teeth, Tin, Bugis tobacco, Gambier, Fish roe, Planks, Java tobacco, Tortoiseshell, Siam gamboge, Horns, Malacca canes, Siam stick-lac, Rattan mats, White rice, Hides, Seaweed, Coffee, Nutmeg, Shark's fin, Gold dust, Cargo rice, Sandalwood, Rattan, Ebony, White birds' nests, Black birds' nests, Rhinoceros horns, Java white sugar, Sea cucumber (**30 articles: Import 24% Export 29%**)

Sources: *ST,* Jan. 28–Jun. 24, 1851. The percentage of articles is from *Tabular Statements, Singapore*, 1851.

local markets, such as tobacco, betel nut, and rice. In other words, Chinese middlemen did not merely conduct the intermediary business of cotton goods for Western merchants but also intermediated between various local traders gathering in Singapore by handling a variety of products, including Asian market-oriented products. Thus, the intermediary business of Chinese middlemen functioned to integrate various parts of the Singapore trade, such as trade with the West, trade with Asia, and intra-regional trade. The business of middlemen could multilaterally connect trading entities centered on Singapore.

The Function of Multilateral Trade Relationships in Singapore

This section discusses the function of those multilateral trade relationships for the growth of Singapore's intra-regional trade. First, we examine the business relationships between Chinese middlemen and local traders through the case of transactions between Chinese merchants and Bugis traders in the Singapore market.

In the first half of the nineteenth century, local Bugis traders engaged in trade between Singapore and the eastern islands, such as Borneo, Celebes, and Bali (*SC*, December 16, 1830; Moor 1837, 13; Davidson 1846, 56–57). Previous studies (Lineton 1975; Andaya 1995) discuss the fact that Bugis immigrants were scattered all over the archipelago, and they have revealed the extensive trading activities based on their dias-

poras in the eighteenth century. Until the early 1860s, the arrival of Bugis traders in the September-to-November period was a crucial influence on the market conditions of Singapore.[9] Presumably, Bugis traders mastered the market in the eastern islands, so it could have been efficient for Chinese middlemen in Singapore to depend on the activities of Bugis in order to distribute cotton goods and obtain regional products. A European traveler wrote this description (Davidson 1846, 56–57) of a transaction between Chinese merchants and Bugis traders at the bazaar in Singapore in the 1840s:

> On the arrival of a boat, her nakoda (or commander) lands with nearly every man on board; and he may be seen walking all over the place for a few days before making any bargain. . . . They [Bugis] are, however, always received with a hearty welcome by the Chinese of the Island [Singapore], who, inviting them to be seated, immediately hand round the *siri-box* (betel-nut, arica leaf, &c.) among them; and over this universal luxury, they will sit and talk on business matters for hours, during which time it may be fairly calculated that both host and guests tell a lie per minute, without betraying by their countenances the slightest consciousness of having been thus engaged. This strange sort of preliminary negotiation goes on, probably, for a week; at the end of which the passer-by [Bugis] may see the contents of the different Bugis boats entering the Chinese shops or stores, as the case may be.

From this description, first, we see that interaction with Bugis traders required experience and expertise with local commerce and a knowledge of the vernacular; this resulted in a situation in which Chinese middlemen who possessed these abilities engaged in transactions with local Bugis traders. Through this transaction with Bugis in the market, Chinese merchants could complete their intermediary business in European cotton goods.

The transaction in European cotton goods between Chinese middlemen and Bugis traders was closely related to the multilateral trade relationships in Singapore. The transactions were based on an exchange of cotton goods for regional products imported by Bugis traders, and as the commodity compositions of imports from Celebes in Table 5 show, most of the imports were Asian market-oriented products. Therefore, they could not strike a bargain in regional products without the export routes to Asian markets, and as a result European cotton goods were not exported as well.

Let us now look at this circuit of regional products for Asian markets in Singapore in the case of the trade in birds' nests and sea cucumber, imported from the eastern islands and mostly exported to China. Table 8 shows the quantities of monthly imports and exports of birds' nests and sea cucumber for Singapore from 1831 to 1832. As can be seen from the gray-highlighted cells indicating the largest quantity of imports and

9) See *SFP*, Report on the Market, November 29, 1852; September 30, 1853; October 20, 1857; October 5, 1859; November 21, 1861; September 19, 1862; November 21, 1864.

Table 8 Quantities of Monthly Imports and Exports of Birds' Nests and Sea Cucumbers in Singapore, 1831–32
Unit: Birds' nests (Catty, 100 catties=1 picul), Sea cucumbers (Picul)

1831	Jan	Feb	Mar	Apr	May	Jun	Jul	Aug	Sep	Oct	Nov	Dec
Birds' nests												
Imports	40	1,419	112	718.5	174	2,227	58	1,685	1,775	5,554	435	212
Exports						16,215	1,441	1,945				
Sea cucumber												
Imports	146	52	106	286.5	369.5	589	125	38	299	671	59	58
Exports					5	2,075	873.5	35.5				

1832	Jan	Feb	Mar	Apr	May	Jun	Jul	Aug	Sep	Oct	Nov	Dec
Birds' nests												
Imports			150	175	354	225	1,895	132	413	15,140	273	538
Exports					120	17,108	1,997	1,162				
Sea cucumber												
Imports		30	156	662	238	598	215	170	985	593.5	201	136.5
Exports					40	1,704	931	186				

Source: *SC*, Jan. 1831–Dec. 1832.

exports in each year, a large amount of both articles were imported in September and October, which was the high season for the arrival of Bugis traders from the remote eastern islands with the southwest monsoon. However, according to the table, exports of both articles concentrated on the season from May to August. In the first half of the nineteenth century, Chinese junks arrived at Singapore in January with the northeast monsoon, and they purchased various articles, including regional products, from the Chinese merchants in Singapore. They then rode on the southwest monsoon in May and June to return to Chinese ports with their purchases (*SC*, April 23, 1829; April 28, 1831; Earl 1837, 365–367). Thus, there was a seasonal gap between imports and exports in birds' nests and sea cucumber; a large amount of imports in October was exported in June of the next year. We assume that Chinese merchants in Singapore connected the imports of articles by Bugis with the exports by Chinese junks, storing them in their own warehouses. Thus, the multilateral trade relationships formed by Chinese middlemen supported the distribution of regional products for Chinese markets via Singapore.

In the above case, we looked at the flow of commodities imported from within the region and exported externally, namely to China, but the function of the multilateral trade relationships is applicable to the internal circulation of regional products as well. For instance, Singapore's intra-regional trade relationships seemed to function to facilitate the export of rattan collected in tropical forests in Sumatra to Siam and the export of Siamese salt to Sumatra through connections with both areas. The distribution system of regional products was reorganized through the multilateral trade relationships in Singapore, and the influx of European cotton goods, as the new wave from the external

region, joined this flow via Singapore. Furthermore, we assume that traditional circulations could strengthen connections with Western trade through the confluence of European cotton and could respond to European demand more readily. In Table 4, for example, in 1852 the largest imports from Sumatra were of gutta-percha, a resin recognized for its utility as a gum in the 1840s and thus suddenly in demand in Europe. In other words, although one of the driving forces for the growth of Singapore's intra-regional trade was certainly European cotton goods, the dynamic behind the new impetus to the growth of trade was a combination of a new wave of European cotton and the traditional circulations of regional products in Singapore.

Conclusion

This paper discussed the growth of intra-regional trade centered on British and Dutch colonies through a statistical analysis. In the first part, it showed that intra-regional trade increased with the shift in focus from Java to Singapore from the 1820s, and the intra-regional trade of Singapore grew with the extension of its trade relationships throughout Southeast Asia. This growth was attributed partly to the relaxation of high Dutch tariffs on British cotton goods imported via the Straits Settlements. The Dutch protectionist tariff policy, ignoring the Anglo-Dutch Treaty, considerably disrupted Singapore's intra-regional trade with areas under Dutch influence. However, after the 1840s, with restrictions relaxed as a result of British diplomatic protests serving the interests of the Straits Settlements' merchants, the institutional basis for intra-regional trade was set out in accordance with the Anglo-Dutch Treaty.

In the latter part, we analyzed the growth of Singapore's intra-regional trade, examining in particular the function of multilateral trade relationships centered on middlemen. Chinese middlemen in Singapore dealt in various kinds of articles to intermediate between merchants coming to Singapore; they bought regional products from local traders in exchange for European cotton goods and not only delivered regional products to Western merchants but also sold them to Asian merchants. The expansion of the intra-regional export of European cotton goods from Singapore was conducted through multilateral trade relationships based on traditional commodity flows in Asia.

In the first half of the nineteenth century, the expansion in Southeast Asian trade occurred under the advance of Western countries. The establishment of Singapore and the influx of European cotton goods were crucial factors in that expansion. However, the expansion of Singaporean trade occurred not only due to that external impact but also due to the activities of local merchants who responded to the new commercial opportuni-

ties and the reorganization of the distribution system of regional products there. This combination of Western influence and local response culminated in the development of intra-regional trade during this period, and this was one of the patterns of regional response to Western long-distance trade.

Accepted: August 19, 2013

References

Primary Sources

British Parliamentary Papers (BPP). 1842. *No. 352, Papers Relative to the Execution of the Treaty of 1824, by the Netherland Authorities in the East Indies*.

————. 1840. *No. 284, Papers Relative to the Execution of the Treaty of 1824, by the Netherlands Authorities in the East Indies*.

Singapore Chronicle (*SC*). 1824–37.

Singapore Free Press (*SFP*). 1835–65.

The Straits Times and Singapore Journal of Commerce (*ST*). 1845–53.

Statistics

De Bruijn Kops, G. F. 1857; 1858. *Statistiek van den handel en de scheepvaart op Java en Madura sedert 1825* [Statistics of the trade and navigation on Java and Madura since 1825], 2 vols. Batavia: Lange et Co.

Dutch Java

Straits Settlements

Straits Settlements Factory Record (*SSFR*). G/34/162. London. British Library.

Straits Settlements Records (*SSR*). V7, V8. Singapore. National Archives.

Tabular Statements of the Commerce and Shipping of Malacca. Calcutta: Military Orphan Press.

Tabular Statements of the Commerce and Shipping of Prince of Wales Island (Penang). Calcutta: Military Orphan Press.

Tabular Statements of the Commerce and Shipping of Singapore. Calcutta: Military Orphan Press.

Books and Articles

Andaya, Leonard Y. 1995. The Bugis-Makassar Diasporas. *Journal of the Malayan Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society* (*JMBRAS*) 68(1): 119–138.

Blussé, Leonard. 1991. In Praise of Commodities: An Essay on the Cross-cultural Trade in Edible Bird's-Nests. In *Emporia, Commodities and Entrepreneurs in Asian Maritime Trade, c.1400–1750*, edited by Roderich Ptak and Dietmar Rothermund, pp. 317–335. Stuttgart: Franz Steiner Verlag.

Booth, Anne. 1991. The Economic Development of Southeast Asia: 1870–1985. In *Exploring Southeast Asia's Economic Past*, edited by G. D. Snooks, Anthony Reid, and J. J. Pincus, pp. 20–52. Melbourne: Impact Printing.

Buckley, Charles Burton. 1902. *An Anecdotal History of Old Times in Singapore*. Singapore: Fraser & Neave.

Cooke, Nola; and Li, Tana, eds. 2004. *Water Frontier: Commerce and the Chinese in the Lower Mekong Region, 1750–1880*. Singapore: Rowman & Littlefield.

Cowan, C. D., ed. 1964. *The Economic Development of Southeast Asia: Studies in Economic History and Political Economy*. New York: Frederick A. Praeger.

————, ed. 1950. Early Penang and the Rise of Singapore. *JMBRAS* 23(2): 1–211.

Crawfurd, John. 1820. *History of the Indian Archipelago*, Vol. 3. Edinburgh: Archibald Constable.

Cushman, Jennifer Wayne. 1993. *Fields from the Sea: Chinese Junk Trade with Siam during the Late Eighteenth and Early Nineteenth Centuries*. Ithaca: Southeast Asia Program, Cornell University.

Davidson, G. F. 1846. *Trade and Travel in the Far East*. London: Madden and Malcolm.

Dobbin, Christine. 1983. *Islamic Revivalism in a Changing Peasant Economy: Central Sumatra, 1784–1847*. London: Curzon Press.

Earl, George Windsor. 1837. *The Eastern Seas*. London: Wm. H. Allen Co.

Greenberg, Michael. 1951. *British Trade and the Opening of China 1800–42*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Lee, Poh Ping. 1978. *Chinese Society in Nineteenth Century Singapore*. Kuala Lumpur: Oxford University Press.

Li, Tana. 2004a. The Water Frontier: An Introduction. In *Water Frontier: Commerce and the Chinese in the Lower Mekong Region, 1750–1880*, edited by Nola Cooke and Li Tana, pp. 1–17. Singapore: Rowman & Littlefield.

————. 2004b. The Late-Eighteenth- and Early-Nineteenth-Century Mekong Delta in the Regional Trade System. In *Water Frontier: Commerce and the Chinese in the Lower Mekong Region, 1750–1880*, edited by Nola Cooke and Li Tana, pp. 71–84. Singapore: Rowman & Littlefield.

Lindblad, J. Thomas. 2002. The Outer Islands in the 19th Century: Contest for the Periphery. In *The Emergence of a National Economy: An Economic History of Indonesia, 1800–2000*, edited by Howard Dick *et al.*, pp. 82–110. Honolulu: Allen & Unwin.

Lineton, Jacqueline. 1975. Pasompe Ugi: Bugis Migrants and Wanderers. *Archipel* 10: 173–201.

Maddison, Angus; and Prince, Gé, eds. 1989. *Economic Growth in Indonesia, 1820–1940*. Dordrecht: Foris Publications.

Moor, J. H. 1837. *Notice of the Indian Archipelago, and Adjacent Countries*. Singapore: Singapore Free Press.

Muller, Hendrik. 1857. *De Nederlandsche katoennijverheid en het stelsel van bescherming in Nederlandsch-indie* [The Dutch cotton industry and the system of protection in the Netherlands Indies]. Rotterdam: Kramer.

Phipps, John. 1835. *A Practical Treatise on the China and Eastern Trade: Comprising the Commerce of Great Britain and India, Particularly Bengal and Singapore, with China and the Eastern Islands*. London: W. H. Allen.

Posthumus, N. W. 1921. *Dokumenten betreffende de buitenlandsche handelspolitiek van Nederland in de negentiende eeuw, deel 2, onderhandelingen met Engeland over de koloniale handelspolitiek: 1814–1838* [Documents concerning the foreign trade policy of the Netherlands in the nineteenth century, Part 2, Negotiations with England about colonial trade policy: 1814–1838]. 's-Gravenhage: M. Nijhoff.

Ptak, Roderich. 1991. China and the Trade in Tortoise-shell (Sung to Ming Periods). In *Emporia, Commodities and Entrepreneurs in Asian Maritime Trade, c.1400–1750*, edited by Roderich Ptak and Dietmar Rothermund, pp. 195–229. Stuttgart: Franz Steiner Verlag.

Reid, Anthony. 2009. Southeast Asian Consumption of Indian and British Cotton Cloth, 1600–1850. In *How India Clothed the World: The World of South Asian Textiles, 1500–1850*, edited by Giorgio Riello and Tirthankar Roy, pp. 31–51. Leiden: Brill.

————. 2004. Chinese Trade and Southeast Asian Economic Expansion in the Late Eighteenth and Early Nineteenth Centuries: An Overview. In *Water Frontier: Commerce and the Chinese in the Lower Mekong Region, 1750–1880*, edited by Nola Cooke and Li Tana, pp. 21–34. Singapore: NUS

Press; London: Rowman & Littlefield.

———. 1997. A New Phase of Commercial Expansion in Southeast Asia, 1760–1850. In *The Last Stand of Asian Autonomies: Responses to Modernity in the Diverse States of Southeast Asia and Korea, 1750–1900*, edited by Anthony Reid, pp. 57–81. New York: St Martin's Press.

Reid, Anthony; and Fernando, Radin. 1996. Shipping on Melaka and Singapore as an Index of Growth, 1760–1840. In "Asia and Europe: Commerce, Colonialism and Cultures," edited by M. N. Pearson and I. B. Watson. Special Issue, *South Asia: Journal of South Asian Studies* 19(1): 59–84.

SarDesai, D. R. 1977. *British Trade and Expansion in Southeast Asia 1830–1914*. New Delhi: Allied.

Song, Ong Siang. 1902. *One Hundred Year's History of the Chinese in Singapore*. London: Murray.

Sugihara, Kaoru. 2009. The Resurgence of Intra-Asian Trade, 1800–1850. In *How India Clothed the World: The World of South Asian Textiles, 1500–1850*, edited by Giorgio Riello and Tirthankar Roy (with collaboration of Om Prakash and Kaoru Sugihara), pp. 139–169. Leiden: Brill.

Tagliacozzo, Eric. 2004. A Necklace of Fins: Marine Goods Trading in Maritime Southeast Asia, 1780–1860. *International Journal of Asian Studies* 1(1): 23–48.

Thee, Kian Wie. 1989. The Development of Sumatra, 1820–1940. In *Economic Growth in Indonesia, 1820–1940*, edited by Angus Maddison and Gé Prince, pp. 133–158. Dordrecht: Foris Publications.

Turnbull, C. M. 1972. *The Straits Settlements 1826–67: Indian Presidency to Crown Colony*. London: Athlone Press.

Van der Kraan, Alfons. 1998. *Contest for the Java Cotton Trade, 1811–40: An Episode in Anglo-Dutch Rivalry*. Occasional Paper No. 32. Center for South-East Asian Studies, University of Hull.

Webster, Anthony. 2011. The Development of British Commercial and Political Networks in the Straits Settlements 1800 to 1868: The Rise of a Colonial and Regional Economic Identity? *Modern Asian Studies* 45(4): 899–929.

———. 1998. *Gentlemen Capitalists: British Imperialism in Southeast Asia 1770–1890*. New York: Tauris.

Wong, Lin Ken. 1960. The Trade of Singapore 1819–69. *JMBRAS* 33(4): 1–315.

Wright, H. R. C. 1961. *East-Indian Economic Problems of the Age of Cornwallis & Raffles*. London: Luzac and Company.

———. 1955. *Free Trade and Protection in the Netherlands 1816–1830: A Study of the First Benelux*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Yen, Ching-hwang. 1986. *A Social History of the Chinese in Singapore and Malaya, 1800–1911*. Singapore: Oxford University Press.

The Long-term Pattern of Maritime Trade in Java from the Late Eighteenth Century to the Mid-Nineteenth Century

Ryuto Shimada*

This article investigates the trade pattern of Java from the late eighteenth century to the mid-nineteenth century from a long-term perspective. There is no comprehensive data on Javanese trade during the period in question, with information on local and regional trade being particularly scarce. To fill in the missing pieces and identify a broad trend, this paper attempts to examine data on both the late eighteenth century and the second quarter of the nineteenth century and put them together with the scattered data available on the first half of the nineteenth century.

This paper suggests, first, that while it is known that Java's economic relations with the outside world were heavily oriented toward trade with the Netherlands, this trend began in the late eighteenth century rather than with the introduction of the Cultivation System in 1830. Second, Java's coastal trade also began to develop in the late eighteenth century. This trade was conducted by European traders and Asian indigenous traders, including overseas Chinese traders settled in Java.

Third, trade with the Outer Islands declined in the late eighteenth century but resumed its expansion in the second quarter of the nineteenth century. Fourth, intra-Asian trade with the region outside insular Southeast Asia declined in the long run, along with the decline and bankruptcy of the VOC, which had successfully engaged in this branch of intra-Asian trade since the seventeenth century.

Keywords: Java, Batavia, Dutch East India Company, VOC, Euro-Asian trade, intra-Asian trade

Introduction

Echoing the treatment of the modern period in Nicholas Tarling's *Cambridge History of Southeast Asia* (1992), which begins around 1800, traditional historiography of the maritime trade of Java has also regarded the beginning of the nineteenth century as a genuine watershed. Indeed, the Dutch East India Company (Vereinigde Oost-indische Com-

* 島田竜登, Graduate School of Humanities and Sociology, The University of Tokyo, 7-3-1 Hongo, Bunkyo-ku, Tokyo 113-0033, Japan
e-mail: shimada@l.u-tokyo.ac.jp

pagnie, hereafter VOC) was put to an end in 1799. On the other hand, we cannot disregard the fact that the rise of British powers in Asian waters, expressed in the activities of the English East India Company and British country traders, had already begun in the second half of the eighteenth century (Furber 1976; Webster 1998), together with equally vigorous activities of Asian indigenous traders such as the Bugis in Southeast Asia (Andaya 1995; Knaap and Sutherland 2004). Moreover, looking at the domestic inland economy of Java, the Dutch had begun to strengthen their political and commercial powers since the eighteenth century. For example, they began supervision of coffee cultivation in the Preangan highlands, which was to become a prototype of the so-called Cultivation System after 1830 (Breman 2010; Ohashi 2010). Meanwhile, Semarang and Surabaya, which had conducted maritime trade under the control of the Dutch since the late seventeenth century,[1] became the most important ports for the Dutch colonial authorities for the development of colonial trade in the nineteenth century. Taking into consideration these background changes within and outside Java, and in accordance with Tarling's suggestion in *Cambridge History of Southeast Asia* that the modern political framework had historical roots in the late eighteenth century (Tarling 1992), we can hypothesize that changes in maritime trade patterns began in the late eighteenth century rather than after the turn of the century. And it makes sense to take Java as a case study to test this hypothesis, since comparatively ample quantitative data are available there.[2]

Yet there is almost no previous research that has addressed this issue from a general or broad perspective, except for two seminal works by Anthony Reid and Radin Fernando on the Melaka trade (Reid and Fernando 1996) as well as by Kaoru Sugihara in terms of general survey (Sugihara 2009). This is chiefly because of the lack of proper records for maritime trade in Java, or even in Batavia, around the first quarter of the nineteenth century. Of course, even if we lack a comprehensive set of data for this period, it is possible to compare the maritime trade of Java in the late eighteenth century with that in the second quarter of the nineteenth century, in order to delineate the longer-term trend. However, it is technically challenging to handle records for both periods for the purpose of comparison. In the eighteenth century, maritime trade in major ports of Java was recorded by the VOC. The company had several purposes for keeping records: the first was to record its own business, the second was to report on the maritime trade conducted

1) The VOC had strengthened its power in Semarang since the 1680s, and Surabaya fell under the VOC in 1743 (Jacobs 2006, 237–239).

2) Not only the history of maritime trade in Java, but also economic history in general has been written with the assumption that the beginning of the nineteenth century was the watershed, and the eighteenth century has been regarded as part of the pre-modern period, although recent research has found some changing elements in the second half of the eighteenth century. Vincent Houben (2002a) is an example of this trend.

by rival traders, and the third was to collect customs duty. On the other hand, records after 1825 were written by the Dutch colonial authorities simply in order to collect customs duty. In short, the purpose and style of records of maritime trade were quite different, so historians have hesitated to conduct an explicit comparative investigation.

The main purpose of this article is to meet this challenge by attempting a survey of Java's maritime trade from the late eighteenth century to the mid-nineteenth century, with the aim of establishing long-term trends. The methodological emphasis is on the comparative analysis between the beginning and ending decades of the period. It will be suggested that despite the stagnation during the early years of the nineteenth century, some persistent, long-term tendencies can be delineated, and that they must have been present during the crucial period of structural changes in international trade in Asia and the world as a whole.

The next two sections attempt a survey of maritime trade in the late eighteenth century. Trade by the VOC as well as non-Dutch merchants will be investigated, and some changing trends toward the nineteenth century will be identified. Then, a general observation of Java's international trade in the second quarter of the nineteenth century will be made, with special reference to coverage of customs records. On the basis of this observation, a detailed examination of the trend shifts will be conducted by analyzing the data of three selected years: 1826, 1836, and 1846. Finally, this article will focus on the 1836 shipping record of the port of Batavia, where the patterns in Java's coastal trade will be presented. Throughout the article, patterns of maritime trade in Java will be analyzed by distinguishing the nature of trade into several types: trade with the Netherlands, with other European countries, with insular Southeast Asia, and with other parts of Asia, as well as coastal trade.

The quantitative data shown in this article are collected from unpublished Dutch records preserved in the National Archives of Republic of Indonesia in Jakarta (Arsip Nasional Republik Indonesia, ANRI), as well as from published customs records by the Dutch colonial authorities and some secondary works.

The VOC Trading Network of Batavia in the Late Eighteenth Century

Batavia was a key transit port for the trading activities of the VOC. By 1619 this port had been established as the Asian headquarters of the Dutch company, and over time the trading business in Batavia developed for the VOC as well as Asian indigenous traders.

The VOC was engaged in two types of trading business, and Batavia played a significant role in both. The first task was to conduct Euro-Asian trade. Getting a supply

of precious metals from the Netherlands, the VOC purchased Asian commodities such as pepper and spices and sent them to Europe. Although major commodities for the European market changed from time to time, Batavia remained the key transit port in this trade throughout the two centuries in which the VOC operated. Ships coming from the Netherlands first arrived at Batavia, and then precious metals were reshipped to Dutch trading posts scattered around maritime Asia, while products from Asian trading posts were collected at Batavia for dispatch to the Dutch Republic (Shimada 2006, 131–135). Sometimes direct trade was conducted—for example, Chinese tea was exported from Guangzhou directly to the Dutch Republic without passing through Batavia in 1729–34 and 1757–94 (Liu 2007, 3–5)—but this was an exception rather than the rule.[3)]

Located at the crossroads of multi-shipping lines of the VOC in Asia, Batavia was also a transit port in the intra-Asian trade. First of all, it was the collection point for products from the Indonesian Archipelago such as pepper, cloves, nutmeg, sugar, and tin. Second, Batavia was the transit port for intra-Asian maritime trade on a much larger scale, such as that between Japan and South Asia. In regard to this latter kind of intra-Asian trade, Batavia had become more important than Melaka by 1715. That year, the Japanese central government issued a new act to restrict Dutch trade and permitted only two Dutch trading vessels per year. Before then, the VOC sent four or five vessels a year to Japan, and these vessels went from Japan to South Asian ports via Melaka, not via Batavia, since the major market for Japanese copper was in South Asia. However, due to this new Japanese act, the Dutch had to use larger vessels for the Japan trade, and when they departed from Nagasaki they had to go to Batavia, where Japanese products such as copper were reshipped to South Asia (Shimada 2006, 17–21). At this time Batavia became literally the pivot for the larger-scale intra-Asian trade, conducting direct shipping with Dutch trading posts in almost all of maritime Asia from Japan to Arabia.

Nevertheless, in the late eighteenth century the nature of the VOC trade changed. Table 1 indicates annual average values of the import and export trade in each trading area of the VOC in Java. The Dutch company had four trading areas in Java: Batavia, Banten, Cirebon, and Semarang. Each area sometimes managed several sub-ports. The Semarang area, for example, had Surabaya as a sub-port; and the trading data of Semarang in the table include the trade of Surabaya as well. Among the four trading areas, Batavia had a different role from the other three. The other areas were engaged only in coastal trade with Batavia, while Batavia conducted intra-Asian trade as well as Euro-Asian trade.

3) In the case of return shipping from Asian ports to the Dutch Republic, in 1670–1770 108 vessels were from Batavia and 25 from other Asian ports, but the share of ships from Batavia declined in the course of time. In fact, in 1770–80 only 129 vessels went back from Batavia and 115 vessels were from other Asian ports (Gaastra 2003, 115).

Table 1 Imports and Exports of Java by the VOC, 1771–90 (Fl.)

	Sept. 1771–Aug. 1773			Sept. 1789–Aug. 1790		
	Imports	Exports	Total	Imports	Exports	Total
Batavia						
Intra-Asian trade	3,618,000	6,183,600	9,801,600	3,206,800	5,236,500	8,443,300
Euro-Asian trade	5,058,800	1,813,100	6,871,900	5,877,100	1,258,200	7,135,300
Banten						
Intra-Asian trade	412,300	337,700	750,000	467,800	438,700	906,500
Cirebon						
Intra-Asian trade	32,100	131,900	164,000	220,600	274,700	495,300
Semarang						
Intra-Asian trade	137,600	344,400	482,000	539,500	758,100	1,297,600

Source: Jacobs (2006, 316–317, 338–341, 350–351).

Therefore, the export and import values in Banten, Cirebon, and Semarang are included in the data of export and import values of Batavia. This is why we need to examine only the data of Batavia if we want to get the shares of Java's intra-Asian trade (including coastal trade) and Java's Euro-Asian trade by the VOC.

Given the above context, the reading of this table makes it clear that for the VOC in Java, intra-Asian trade, including coastal trade, was more important than Euro-Asian trade, since the total value of the former amounted to 9,801,600 guilders in the 1770s and 8,443,300 guilders around 1790, although the absolute total value of the latter trade rose from 6,871,900 guilders in the 1770s to 7,135,300 guilders around 1790. In addition, the value of the Dutch coastal trade in Java can be easily calculated, because they were simply the sum of the trade values of the three areas other than Batavia. Hence, we can estimate that the Dutch coastal trade values in Java were 1,396,000 guilders in the 1770s and 2,699,400 guilders around 1790. This means that the Dutch trade with the outside of Java was more important than the Dutch coastal trade in Java. However, coastal trade became more important around 1790, as a result of the decline in VOC trade with the outside of Java due to the Dutch defeat in the Fourth Anglo-Dutch War between 1780 and 1784.

Non-Dutch Trading Network in Batavia in the Late Eighteenth Century

Beyond the scope of the VOC, Batavia was also a significant place for European and indigenous Asian maritime traders. European traders and expeditions called at Batavia not only for trade but also to repair their vessels. For instance, Captain James Cook's expedition arrived at Batavia in 1770 for ship repair. Batavia had a shipyard, especially

designed for repairs, on the island of Onrust in the Bay of Batavia. In fact, the vessels commanded by Captain Cook were repaired on Onrust Island. Captain Cook's words about this shipyard were as follows:

> I must say that I do not believe that there is a marine yard in the world where work is done with more alertness than here, or where there are better conveniences for heaving ships down both in point of safety and despatch. Here they heave down by two masts, which is not now practised by the English; but I hold it to be much safer and more expeditious than by heaving down by one mast. (Beaglehole 1955, 438)

Although British country traders used this port for the purpose of trading, the most important non-Dutch Europeans there were Portuguese traders. Portuguese merchants based in Asian port cities such as Macau and Ayutthaya visited Batavia for trade: Portuguese ships from Macau, for example, brought Chinese tea to Batavia for reexport by the Dutch to the Netherlands (Souza 1986, 134–151).

Much more important non-Dutch traders for the Batavian trade were Asian traders, such as Chinese and Indonesians. According to Leonard Blussé, Chinese junks called at Batavia from Xiamen (Amoy) and other ports on the southern Chinese coast. Chinese junks numbered around 5 to 18 per year between 1681 and 1793 (Blussé 1986, 123), and they carried products such as tea and porcelain to Batavia. Indeed, before the VOC succeeded in obtaining permission to trade regularly in Guangzhou and the VOC established a direct link with China for the tea trade in 1729 (Liu 2007, 3), the Chinese junk trade in Batavia, together with the Portuguese trade between Macau and Batavia, was a highly important means for the Dutch to procure Chinese products. In addition to Chinese products, these junks transported Chinese immigrants who worked as manual laborers in the city as well as on the plantations and sugar mills in the suburban areas of Batavia.

Indonesian traders were also engaged in the trade in Batavia. Gerrit J. Knaap investigated coastal trade on the Javanese coast around 1775. Based on Dutch shipping records in the 15 ports on the northwestern coast of Java, he demonstrated the significance of the coastal trade by indigenous traders such as those from China, Java, Malaya, and Sulawesi, as well as Europe (Knaap 1996, 66). A key merchandise for them was Javanese rice, and several other items such as oil, gambier, fish, and textiles were also traded within the framework of this coastal trade. Batavia, for instance, imported rice and palm sugar. While Batavia's suburban areas were busily engaged in producing sugar for export to Europe, Batavia had to import Javanese coconut sugar and rice for urban and suburban consumption by indigenous people. Indeed, Batavia imported no less than 102,170 pikuls of rice through non-Dutch traders and at least 105,250 pikuls of rice through the VOC on an annual average (1 pikul=approximately 60 kg) (*ibid.*, 214–217).

Table 2 Non-Dutch Vessels Arriving at Batavia in 1770 and 1790

From	1770	1790
Java and Madura	270	211
Other Eastern Archipelago	101	72
Other Southeast Asia	19	4
Other Asia	7	7
Unknown	16	18
Total	413	312

Sources: ANRI: Hoge Regering 2627, 2597, Dagregister Batavia 1770 and 1790.

Table 2 demonstrates the shipping network of Batavia, which was realized by non-Dutch traders in the years 1770 and 1790. In this table, "Java and Madura" indicates the annual number of arrivals of non-Dutch vessels from the ports in Java and Madura. "Other Eastern Archipelago" shows the number of vessels from ports outside of Java and Madura in insular Southeast Asia such as Ambon and Melaka, while "Other Southeast Asia" gives the number of ships from Siam and Cambodia. "Other Asia" shows ships from places in Asia but outside Southeast Asia, such as Japan, China, and Coromandel. It should be noted that unlike in Table 1, we do not have any information on the volumes and values of trade, just the number of vessels.

In regard to Table 2 and its original sources, we can observe the following points. First, in terms of the number of vessels, it is obvious that the coastal trade in Java by non-Dutch traders was an important trade for the port of Batavia, as annually more than 200 vessels arrived at Batavia from Java and Madura. Among the ports in Java and Madura, important ports for trade with Batavia were Rembang (71 vessels in 1770 and 37 in 1790) and Pekalongang (33 in 1770 and 52 in 1790). These ports are relatively close to Batavia in terms of geography. Second, the share of trade with insular Southeast Asia ("Other Eastern Archipelago" in the table) was also high, and in insular Southeast Asia, Makassar, which was a base port for Bugis traders, was the most important (31 in 1770 and 20 in 1790). Third, compared to trade within insular Southeast Asia, non-Dutch trade with ports in mainland Southeast Asia was small and even showed a decline: from 19 vessels in 1770 (13 from Siam and 6 from Cambodia) to 4 vessels in 1790 (all from Siam). Fourth, the non-Dutch trade with regions outside of Southeast Asia was also small. In the year 1770, two vessels from Macau came to Batavia, two from Xiamen, two from Guangzhou, one from Bengal, and one from Coromandel. In 1790 there were two vessels from Macau, two from Guangzhou, and three from Coromandel.[4)]

In this sense, Batavia was clearly a key hub-port in Asian waters not only for the

4) ANRI: Hoge Regering 2627, 2597, Dagregister Batavia 1770 and 1790.

VOC but also for non-Dutch traders. However, the character of this port changed during the late eighteenth century. Prior to then, the VOC had been the sole player in Euro-Asian trade. It had also been a key trader with the outside of Java, particularly with areas outside of insular Southeast Asia. Yet it became much more heavily involved in Javanese coastal trade in the late eighteenth century, while it lost its comparative advantage in the Asian trade with the outside of Java among the total trading business of the VOC. With the VOC's development in Javanese coastal trade, non-Dutch merchants' shipping also developed in the coastal trade in Java and in the trade with insular Southeast Asia.

Overview of the International Trade of Java and Madura from 1825 to 1850

Java's maritime trade during the first quarter of the nineteenth century is not well understood, due to the lack of availability of proper quantitative data. Nevertheless, it is generally assumed that Java's maritime trade stagnated during the time of Governor-General Herman Willem Daendels in 1808–11 and his successor Jan Willem Janssens in 1811, as well as the years of British occupation between 1811 and 1816. During the time of Daendels and Janssens, the Dutch in Batavia were busy preparing for possible war against the British. During the years of British occupation, the British colonial government was engaged in domestic work rather than international trade (De Klerck 1975, Vol. 2, 13–27; Elson 1984, 6–7). On the other hand, it is possible that non-Dutch merchants were heavily engaged in maritime trade, particularly in coastal trade, during the period from 1808 to 1816. US vessels were also heavily engaged in intra-Asian trade, replacing Dutch vessels, and the Java trade was no exception. American traders participated in maritime activities in Asian waters after the American Revolution (Blussé 2008, 60–66). By contrast, the VOC in Batavia faced several problems conducting long-distance trade in Asian waters, due to possible attacks by the British—even before the collapse of the VOC in 1799. This situation was created by the invasion of Revolutionary France into the Dutch Republic since 1794 and then the establishment of the Dutch Batavian Republic in 1795 under strong French influence. During this time of war, vessels under the flag of neutral countries such as the United States were lifelines for Batavia. In fact, the VOC in Batavia hired US vessels to conduct intra-Asian trade. In the case of Dutch trade with Japan, the Dutch High Government of Batavia (Hoge Regering) sent 18 trading vessels to Japan during the 17 years between 1795 and 1811. Among these 18 vessels, only three belonged to the Dutch authorities in Batavia; the others were all chartered private ships—10 American, 3 Dutch, 1 Bremer, and 1 Danish (Kanai 1986, 237; Shimada 2011, 37).

While it is difficult to obtain the whole picture of the maritime trade of Batavia and Java during this period, except for the fact that US vessels played an important role, it is certain that international trade recovered after the return of Java to the Dutch in 1816, since the customs duty revenue rose (Korthals Altes 1991, 13). In the light of difficulties with research on the first quarter of the nineteenth century, we propose to look at the data after 1825 and compare the period after 1825 with the late eighteenth century in order to examine the long-term trends in Java's maritime trade. This is because quantitative trade data can be obtained from the annual aggregated customs records in the ports on the islands of Java and Madura for the period after 1825.[5)]

The number of ports for international trade in Java and Madura amounted to 22 in 1836 (see Table 3) (Directeur van 's Lands Middelen en Domeinen 1837). The Dutch colonial authorities classified them into three divisions according to their geographical location. Ceringin, Banten, Batavia, Indramayu, and Cirebon in West Java belonged to the first division. In 1836 the revenue from customs duty from the import and export trade that the Dutch colonial authorities pocketed in Java and Madura amounted to 4,080,154 guilders. Approximately 66 percent of this revenue was obtained in the ports in this first division, although the revenue obtained in Batavia accounted for 63.1 percent of the total revenue in Java and Madura while Cirebon's share was 1.8 percent and the other ports' shares were much smaller.

The second division consisted of seven ports: Tegal, Pekalongang, Semarang, Japara, Juwana, Rembang, and Tuban on the northeastern coast of Java. Among them Semarang had the largest revenue, accounting for about 17.8 percent of the total revenue in Java and Madura, while Pekalongang's share amounted to 2.3 percent and each of the other ports accounted for less than 1 percent. On the other hand, the 10 ports in East Java and the islands of Madura and Bawean under the third division collected 12.4 percent of the total customs revenue in Java and Madura. Surabaya was the largest port in this division (6.7 percent of the total), followed by Pasuruan (3.5 percent) and Gresik (1.1 percent). The other ports in the third division were Probolinggo, Besuki, Panarukan, Banyuwangi, Sumanap, Pamekasan, and Bawean, and their shares were very small.

To sum up, Batavia was the major port in Java and Madura, and the Dutch authorities obtained more than half their total customs revenues from this port. Semarang, Surabaya, and Pasuruan were next in importance, although the share of these ports was very small compared to Batavia. The other ports in Java and Madura were not so important in terms

5) The Dutch colonial authorities published annual customs records such as Directeur van 's Lands Middelen en Domeinen (1828; 1837) and Directeur der Middelen en Domeinen (1847). Based on these annual publications, Bruijn Kops (1858) offers the useful two-volume digest of the statistics of international trade between 1825 and 1856.

Table 3 Customs Revenues in Java and Madura in 1836 (Fl.)

	Customs Revenues	%
Division 1		
Ceringin	10,024	0.2
Banten	17,396	0.4
Batavia	2,572,902	63.1
Indramayu	2,334	0.1
Cirebon	72,607	1.8
Total	2,675,263	65.6
Division 2		
Tegal	39,898	1.0
Pekalongang	95,271	2.3
Semarang	727,167	17.8
Japara	679	0.0
Juwana	8,178	0.2
Rembang	26,776	0.7
Tuban	1,618	0.0
Total	899,587	22.0
Division 3		
Gresik	43,670	1.1
Surabaya	273,743	6.7
Pasuruan	143,557	3.5
Probolinggo	11,019	0.3
Besuki	10,515	0.3
Panarukan	2,422	0.1
Banyuwangi	9,811	0.2
Sumanap	8,084	0.2
Pamekasan	239	0.0
Bawean	2,244	0.1
Total	505,304	12.4
Total	4,080,154	100.0

Source: Directeur van 's Lands Middelen en Domeinen (1837).

of "international trade," that is, trade outside the two islands. However, this does not mean that these ports were less important in coastal trade in Java and Madura, as customs records were drawn just for collecting customs duty in the import and export trade and do not contain data on domestic transactions, including coastal trade in Java. We know that these ports were busily engaged in coastal trade in Java in the second quarter of the nineteenth century, and this echoes the state of affairs shown in the survey of coastal trade in the second half of the eighteenth century. Keeping these points in mind, we shall conduct detailed examinations of the international trade of Java and Madura for the first quarter of the nineteenth century.

Figs. 1, 2, and 3 indicate general trends in the total commodity trade and the commodity trade with the Netherlands in Java and Madura in the second quarter of the

nineteenth century. Fig. 1 shows the commodity export trade from Java and Madura. The largest change was the sharp increase in export trade in the 1830s. During the second half of the 1820s, the Dutch colonial government spent huge resources on the Java War, which began with the revolt by Prince Diponegoro. The war was carried out mainly in Central and East Java and ended in 1830 with the Dutch victory, which enabled the Dutch to introduce the Cultivation System from 1830, in order to supply crops, such as sugar, for the market in the Netherlands. As a result of the system's success, exports to the homeland became very large in scale. For example, Java exported 6,686,746 guilders' worth of coffee, 213,689 guilders' worth of powder sugar, and 33,084 guilders' worth of indigo in 1825–27 on annual average, while it exported 13,692,403 guilders' worth of coffee, 16,293,259 guilders' worth of powder sugar, and 3,469,160 guilders' worth of indigo in 1848–50 (Bruijn Kops 1858, Vol. 2, 120, 132, 186). After this sharp rise in the 1830s, however, commodity exports declined slightly in the 1840s, as market conditions in the Netherlands were affected by the oversupply of colonial products.

The commodity import trade is shown in Fig. 2. The most remarkable point in this figure is that the import values were somewhat smaller than figures for the export trade. Exports grew rapidly during the 1830s, while import growth was not so significant. During this period, the major import from the Netherlands was cotton textiles. On annual average, 828,169 guilders' worth of cotton textiles was imported to Java from the Netherlands in 1825–28 and 5,049,857 guilders' worth in 1848–50 (Bruijn Kops 1858, Vol. 1, 42). Yet, the Dutch industry in this sector was not very well developed. Thus, a huge amount of bullion had to be sent to Java from the Netherlands to pay for colonial crops. Indeed, large amounts of high-quality British cotton textiles were imported into Java, especially

Fig. 1 Commodity Exports from Java and Madura, 1825–50 (Total Trade [bold line] and Trade with the Netherlands [fine line]) (Fl.)
Source: Bruijn Kops (1858).

from the mid-1820s to the mid-1830s, although Dutch textile imports also grew around 1830 and after the mid-1830s (Kraan 1996, 52–56; Houben 2002b, 69–70).

When looking at Fig. 3, differences in the characteristics between export and import trade are much clearer. This figure shows the shares of the Netherlands in the total export and import trade. The export trade definitely depended upon exports to the Netherlands. In fact, the shares rose from approximately 50 percent in 1825 to approximately 70 percent in the mid-nineteenth century. On the other hand, in the case of the import trade, the dependence on the Netherlands was not so high. The homeland shares actually fluctuated between 20 percent and 40 percent. This difference was partly because some cotton textiles were imported from Britain into Java and also because the share of the import trade with insular Southeast Asia had been high since the eighteenth century.

Fig. 2 Commodity Imports into Java and Madura, 1825–50 (Total Trade [bold line] and Trade with the Netherlands [fine line]) (Fl.)
Source: Bruijn Kops (1858).

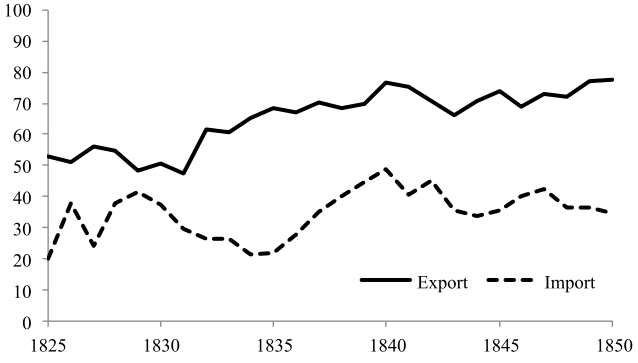


Fig. 3 Shares of Commodity Trade with the Netherlands, 1825–50 (%)
Source: Bruijn Kops (1858).

Comparison of International Trade in 1826, 1836, and 1846

Which areas and countries did Java establish strong links with in international trade? This point will be investigated in greater detail. In general, trading links with Europe became stronger. Trade with the Eastern Archipelago went up a bit. On the other hand, trade with other Asian regions declined in relative terms.

This trend is demonstrated in Table 4, which shows the geographical composition of commodity exports and imports in Java and Madura. First, without a question, growth of trade with the Netherlands was remarkable. In the export trade, the absolute value increased more than four times between 1826 and 1846, with the share reaching around 70 percent. In addition, Java's trade with European countries also increased. Non-Dutch European countries' shares rose from 3.9 percent to 9.2 percent in the export trade and from 13.7 percent to 24.2 percent in the import trade during the two decades. Britain's share in the import trade in particular grew, from 10.5 percent in 1826 to 20.2 percent in 1846, in spite of the fact that non-Dutch vessels had to pay import duty at higher rates

Table 4 Commodity Exports and Imports in Java and Madura in 1826, 1836, and 1846

	Exports						Imports					
	1826		1836		1846		1826		1836		1846	
	fl.	%	fl.	%	fl.	%	fl.	%	fl.	%	fl.	%
Netherlands	6,506,130	50.9	27,217,806	67.6	39,565,735	69.2	3,873,804	37.8	5,777,043	32.4	11,013,146	41.0
Britain	338,898	2.6	139,592	0.3	2,365,487	4.1	1,078,412	10.5	3,318,495	18.6	5,440,863	20.2
France	42,232	0.3	1,944,145	4.8	1,326,149	2.3	305,615	3.0	382,733	2.1	442,893	1.6
Belgium	–	–	–	–	59,770	0.1	–	–	–	–	268	0.0
Sweden	57,172	0.4	253,959	0.6	345,949	0.6	–	–	28,026	0.2	103,068	0.4
Hamburg	63,334	0.5	108,142	0.3	615,041	1.1	21,437	0.2	23,078	0.1	312,323	1.2
Denmark	–	–	–	–	281,161	0.5	–	–	–	–	81,367	0.3
Bremen	–	–	–	–	187,750	0.3	–	–	–	–	28,833	0.1
Mediterranean Sea	–	–	–	–	85,376	0.1	–	–	–	–	86,616	0.3
United States	211,231	1.7	1,002,223	2.5	1,199,644	2.1	368,329	3.6	252,933	1.4	385,042	1.4
Cape Town	28,726	0.2	–	–	55,156	0.1	5,611	0.1	19,354	0.1	7,775	0.0
Guinea	–	–	–	–	60,976	0.1	–	–	–	–	–	–
Isle of France	97,934	0.8	36,253	0.1	–	–	73,866	0.7	10,513	0.1	19,263	0.1
Cocos Islands	–	–	8,165	0.0	–	–	–	–	–	–	–	–
Persian Gulf	252,586	2.0	–	–	197,123	0.3	45,980	0.4	–	–	34,974	0.1
Bengal, Coromandel, and Malabar	769,810	6.0	112,576	0.3	11,840	0.0	689,377	6.7	290,200	1.6	178,126	0.7
Ceylon	24,716	0.2	–	–	–	–	36,554	0.4	–	–	–	–
Siam	109,936	0.9	–	–	79,895	0.1	107,769	1.1	84,256	0.5	193,448	0.7
Cochinchina	–	–	6,058	0.0	84,985	0.1	–	–	7,795	0.0	6,350	0.0
China and Macau	978,659	7.7	3,221,522	8.0	1,503,108	2.6	301,929	2.9	938,075	5.3	691,724	2.6
Manila	19,700	0.2	–	–	312	0.0	75,781	0.7	60,906	0.3	225,853	0.8
Japan	23,365	0.2	245,109	0.6	222,192	0.4	161,615	1.6	579,439	3.2	552,309	2.1
New Holland	52,806	0.4	84,992	0.2	237,869	0.4	21,278	0.2	20,533	0.1	11,009	0.0
Eastern Archipelago	3,214,108	25.1	5,903,453	14.7	8,679,238	15.2	3,083,218	30.1	6,055,369	33.9	7,058,373	26.3
Total	12,791,343	100.0	40,283,995	100.0	57,164,756	100.0	10,250,575	100.0	17,848,748	100.0	26,873,623	100.0

Sources: Directeur van 's Lands Middelen en Domeinen (1828; 1837); Directeur der Middelen en Domeinen (1847).

(Knaap 1989, 18).

The second important point in Table 4 concerns trade with the Eastern Archipelago (insular Southeast Asia except for Manila). Certainly, the shares declined in both export and import trade. However, the absolute values increased greatly, from 3,214,108 guilders in 1826 to 8,679,238 guilders in 1846 in the case of export trade and from 3,083,218 guilders in 1826 to 7,058,373 guilders in 1846 in the import trade. The growth rates in trade with the Eastern Archipelago were much higher than those in trade with other parts of Asia, as analyzed later. Regarding the export trade with the Eastern Archipelago, major export items were cotton textiles (increased from 445,982 guilders' worth of Javanese textiles, 309,523 guilders' worth of European textiles, and 148,308 guilders' worth of South Asian textiles in 1828–30 to 694,827 guilders' worth of Javanese textiles, 1,652,812 guilders' worth of European textiles, and 30,796 guilders' worth of South Asian textiles in 1848–50 on annual average), rice (from 832,274 guilders to 1,097,002 guilders) and tobacco (from 361,894 guilders to 466,712 guilders) (Bruijn Kops 1858, Vol. 2, 263, 288, 379, 411, 424). By and large, trade with insular Southeast Asia increased in absolute terms while experiencing a comparative decline.

Third, a decline can be observed in trade with Southeast Asia outside the Eastern Archipelago (that is, Siam, Cochinchina, and Manila) and with Asia outside Southeast Asia (that is, the Persian Gulf, Bengal, Coromandel, Malabar, Ceylon, China, Macau, and Japan). Between 1826 and 1846, the share of export trade decreased from 17 percent to 3.7 percent and the share of import trade decreased from 13.8 percent to 7 percent. In the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, the VOC in Batavia was very good at handling this type of intra-Asian trade. For example, South Asian cotton textiles were supplied by the VOC to insular Southeast Asia; Javanese sugar was delivered by the Dutch to Iran, South Asia, and Japan; and tin produced in Bangka and pepper from the Eastern Archipelago were reshipped to China from Batavia by the Dutch company.[6] Hence, the decline in share of trade with these countries was a serious change, even though the comparative decline had already been observed in the late eighteenth century, as mentioned before. However, it should be not that the absolute value of exports declined only slightly from 2,178,772 guilders in 1826 to 2,099,455 guilders in 1846, and in the case of import trade, the value rose from 1,419,005 guilders to 1,882,784 guilders. The decline was of a comparative nature.

6) The VOC in Batavia reshipped Asian products on annual averages between September 1771 and August 1773 as follows: cotton textile, 463,700 guilders to Asian regions and 194,100 guilders to the Netherlands; sugar, 292,400 guilders to Asian regions and 55,900 guilders to the Netherlands; tin, 684,700 guilders to Asian regions and 65,000 guilders to the Netherlands; pepper, 209,100 guilders to Asian regions and 570,100 guilders to the Netherlands (Jacobs 2006, 338, 350).

Shipping at Batavia in 1836

Finally, the coastal trade of Java in the second quarter of the nineteenth century will be examined by consulting a shipping record of the port of Batavia. As mentioned earlier, published customs records refer to the aggregated statistics of total international trade in the ports in Java and Madura; they do not contain any information on coastal trade between the ports in Java and Madura. Moreover, published customs records do not have any trade data for specific ports. Even in the case of the port of Batavia, we do not have any information on total shipping numbers or any data from published sources about maritime trade. On the other hand, the National Archives of the Republic of Indonesia preserves highly valuable manuscript sources, which provide all the arrival and departure shipping data. This source contains each ship's flag nationality, tonnage, arrival or departure date, the name of the captain, the name of the port from which the vessel departed for Batavia, and the vessel's destination after Batavia in the years 1834 and 1836. Following is an analysis of the data for the year 1836, mainly using the above-mentioned record.[7)]

Since its establishment in the early seventeenth century, Batavia was a multiethnic colonial city. For example, in 1836, Batavia (including the suburban area, or *ommelanden*) had 264,313 inhabitants. Among them were only 3,339 European citizens, including mestizo (this ethnic category covers Christians and Jews). Indigenous people such as the Javanese, Sundanese, Bugis, and Malays amounted to 223,311, while there were 34,549 Chinese, 448 Arabs and Moren (Muslims of Indian origin), and 2,666 slaves.[8)] Although Westerners, Chinese, Arabs, and Moren were small in number and were minorities, they had important roles in commercial business and maritime trade in Batavia (Abeyasekere 1987, 60–64; Riddell 2001, 116–117).

Table 5 classifies the vessels that arrived at or departed from Batavia in 1836 according to the nationality of their flag. In terms of number of vessels, the dominant share definitely went to the Dutch. They were followed by the Americans, British, and French. It might seem strange that only one Chinese vessel called at Batavia and that there were no insular Southeast Asian indigenous ships on the list, in spite of the fact that, as already mentioned in this article, there was active coastal trade in Java. Certainly, there was only one junk from mainland China during this year, but Chinese and indigenous vessels that had their bases in Java were classified as Dutch vessels. This is why the average tonnage

7) ANRI: Batavia 338.3: Haven -Department Batavia- Register der in- en uitgeklaarde schepen en vaartuigen gedurende het jaar 1836.

8) ANRI: Batavia 338.3: Bijlage 1: Staat der bevolking in de residentie Batavia over de jaren 1833, 1834, 1835 en 1836.

Table 5 Shipping at Batavia According to Flag Nationality in 1836

Nationality	Arrival			Departure		
	Number of Vessels	Average Tonnage per Vessel	Total Tonnage	Number of Vessels	Average Tonnage per Vessel	Total Tonnage
Netherlands	711	288	204,713	723	291	210,106
USA	63	346	21,815	66	333	21,948
Britain	54	346	18,694	52	319	16,578
France	24	311	7,468	24	341	8,181
Portugal	5	332	1,660	5	332	1,660
Sweden	4	228	912	4	228	912
Kniphauser	2	321	642	2	321	642
Cochinchina	1	300	300	1	300	300
Hamburg	1	274	274	1	274	274
Bremen	1	188	188	1	188	188
China	1	120	120	1	120	120

Source: ANRI: Batavia 338.3: Haven -Department Batavia- Register der in- en uitgeklaarde schepen en vaartuigen gedurende het jaar 1836.

per Dutch vessel was relatively small compared to American and other European vessels.

In order to avoid any misunderstanding about the nature of Dutch flag ships in the analysis of Table 5, Table 6 divides Dutch vessels according to the names of their captains (Chinese captains, captains with Islamic names, European captains, and others). The vessels are further classified according to their ports of embarkation. This shows that, first, some Dutch flag vessels were Asian traders' ships, perhaps based in Java. In terms of the number of vessels, 108 vessels had Chinese captains and 122 had captains with Islamic names—although it is impossible to recognize whether these Muslim traders were Javanese, Bugis, Balinese, Arabs, or something else. Second, in terms of tonnage, the majority were Dutch vessels with European captains, and only they had a connection with the Netherlands.

Table 7 shows the embarkation ports of ships arriving at Batavia in 1836. Among the 852 vessels, 419 came from ports in Java and Madura. Vessels from Semarang (96 vessels and 31,214 tons) took the largest share in Java, followed by Indramayu (75 vessels and 13,021 tons), Surabaya (66 vessels and 24,251 tons), and Cirebon (62 vessels and 10,924 tons). With regard to per ship tonnage, larger vessels were used for trade with ports far from Batavia, which means that indigenous traders tended to be engaged in trade with ports near Batavia while Western merchants were engaged in coastal trade with Javanese ports far from Batavia. Because of the continuous development of the coastal trade from the late eighteenth century, plenty of Javanese products were sent to Batavia via the coastal trade. However, around 1836 Batavia managed to become an exporter of

Table 6 Dutch Flag Ships Arriving at Batavia in 1836

Port of Departure	Number of Vessels	Average Tonnage per Vessel	Total Tonnage
Chinese Captains			
Java	93	139	12,941
Outer Islands	14	121	1,698
Other Asia	1	160	160
Captains with Islamic Names			
Java	109	201	21,938
Outer Islands	13	265	3,442
European Captains			
Java	205	349	71,543
Outer Islands	101	205	20,723
Other Asia	37	260	9,634
Netherlands	126	483	60,900
Others	2	387	774
Others			
Java	10	96	960

Source: ANRI: Batavia 338.3: Haven -Department Batavia- Register der in- en uitgeklaarde schepen en vaartuigen gedurende het jaar 1836.

rice. While Batavia's net imports of rice were 4,382 koyans in 1828 and 1,552 koyans in 1829, they were 14,405 koyans in 1838 and 9,709 koyans in 1844 (1 koyan=approximately 1,380 kg).[9] This reflects the fact that in relative terms Batavia concentrated on the production of rice rather than sugar, while eastern Java specialized in sugar production at the time of the Cultivation System.

Trade with the Eastern Archipelago, as defined in this article, consisted of trade with the Outer Islands and Singapore. Singapore, Riouw, Palembang, and Banda were among the more important, each exceeding 2,000 tons. Regarding other parts of Asia, China was slightly significant in terms of tonnage as seen in Table 7, although Table 4 shows the share of the China trade was exceptionally high in terms of value. Yet, the shares of Japan and India were very small. Meanwhile, with regard to the Western world, Amsterdam took 11.2 percent of the total in terms of tonnage. It was followed by Rotterdam (9.6 percent), Boston (4.0 percent), and Liverpool (3.2 percent). These ports were linked with cotton textile exports to the Dutch East Indies.

9) ANRI: Batavia 1/2: Algemeen jaarlijksch verslag van den staat der Hoofd Baljuwage Batavia 1828/1829; Batavia 2/2: Algemeen verslag1839/1844.

Table 7 Ships Arriving at Batavia in 1836

Port of Departure	Number of Vessels	Average Tonnage per Vessel	Total Tonnage	Share of Yearly Tonnage (%)
Java and Madura				
Sumenep	2	238	476	0.19
Panarukan	7	169	1,182	0.47
Pasuruan	9	540	4,858	1.92
Surabaya	66	367	24,251	9.59
Gresik	4	247	988	0.39
Rembang	7	133	934	0.37
Juwana	4	105	420	0.17
Japara	1	90	90	0.04
Semarang	96	325	31,214	12.34
Pekalongang	39	244	9,508	3.76
Tegal	37	232	8,575	3.39
Cirebon	62	176	10,924	4.32
Indramayu	75	174	13,021	5.15
Kandanghaur	2	197	394	0.16
Anyer	2	144	288	0.11
Wijnkoopsbaai	3	375	1,126	0.45
Cilacap	2	429	858	0.34
Pacitan	1	450	450	0.18
Total	419	261	109,557	43.34
Outer Islands				
Ternate	1	220	220	0.09
Ambon	6	256	1,538	0.61
Banda	9	212	1,909	0.75
Manado	4	165	660	0.26
Makassar	3	219	656	0.26
Timor Kupang	4	168	670	0.26
Lombok	1	260	260	0.10
Banjarmasin	6	310	1,860	0.74
Pontianak	1	204	204	0.08
Sambas	1	210	210	0.08
Riouw	24	147	3,518	1.39
Bangka	6	297	1,784	0.71
Muntok	4	142	566	0.22
Baturusak	1	240	240	0.09
Soengijliat	2	156	312	0.12
Toboali	1	240	240	0.09
Palembang	8	255	2,038	0.81
Lampong	5	41	206	0.08
Bengkulu	2	461	922	0.36
Padang	46	200	9,195	3.63
Total	135	202	27,208	10.76

Table 7-Continued

Port of Departure	Number of Vessels	Average Tonnage per Vessel	Total Tonnage	Share of Yearly Tonnage (%)
Asia				
Japan	1	774	774	0.31
China	8	408	3,260	1.29
Canton	6	309	1,854	0.73
Amoy	1	120	120	0.05
Macau	7	335	2,342	0.93
Manila	6	362	2,174	0.86
Singapore	25	189	4,728	1.87
Colombo	1	181	181	0.07
Pondicherry	1	116	116	0.05
Calcutta	3	275	825	0.33
Bombay	1	172	172	0.07
Mauritius	3	285	856	0.34
Total	63	276	17,402	6.88
Australia				
New South Wales	2	406	812	0.32
Sydney	8	361	2,884	1.14
Port Jackson	1	698	698	0.28
Total	11	399	4,394	1.74
Africa				
Cape Town	2	257	513	0.20
Elmina	1	318	318	0.13
Cameroon	1	189	189	0.07
Total	4	255	1,020	0.40
Netherlands				
Amsterdam	61	463	28,268	11.17
Dordrecht	4	665	2,658	1.05
Hellevoetsluis	2	751	1,502	0.59
Middelburg	6	630	3,778	1.49
Rotterdam	54	451	24,360	9.63
Schiedam	1	864	864	0.34
Total	128	480	61,430	24.27

Table 7-Continued

Port of Departure	Number of Vessels	Average Tonnage per Vessel	Total Tonnage	Share of Yearly Tonnage (%)
Other Europe				
London	6	280	1,678	0.66
Bristol	1	391	391	0.15
Liverpool	20	402	8,033	3.18
Glasgow	2	307	613	0.24
Greenock	3	267	800	0.32
Leith	1	405	405	0.16
Bordeaux	4	257	1,027	0.41
Le Havre	2	431	862	0.34
Marseille	1	303	303	0.12
Nantes	3	262	785	0.31
Bourbon	3	352	1,055	0.42
Hamburg	1	274	274	0.11
Total	47	345	16,226	6.41
USA				
Baltimore	1	350	350	0.14
Boston	28	363	10,163	4.02
Havre de Grace	1	308	308	0.12
New York	7	354	2,476	0.98
Philadelphia	3	329	986	0.39
Total	40	357	14,283	5.65
South America				
Rio de Janeiro	4	259	1,037	0.41
Montevideo	1	224	224	0.09
Total	5	252	1,261	0.50

Source: ANRI: Batavia 338.3: Haven -Department Batavia- Register der in- en uitgeklaarde schepen en vaartuigen gedurende het jaar 1836.

Note: Eight ships from Onrust, one ship from an unknown port, and six ships returned from the sea to Batavia are excluded in this table.

Conclusion

This article investigated the trade pattern of Java from the late eighteenth century to the mid-nineteenth century from a long-term perspective. Its initial purpose was to examine what happened to the maritime trade of Java during the so-called watershed period, which was the beginning of the nineteenth century. This research examined the long-term trend along several dimensions, by asking what conditions prevailed from the eighteenth century, what conditions in the early modern period were discontinued, and what conditions were established during the period from the late eighteenth century to the second

quarter of the nineteenth century. The period in question lacks a comprehensive set of data on Javanese trade, with information on local and regional trade being particularly scarce. To fill in the missing pieces and identify a broad trend, the paper attempted to examine data on both the late eighteenth century and the second quarter of the nineteenth century, and, by putting them together with the scattered data available on the first half of the nineteenth century such as business by American traders in Asian waters, suggested the following patterns.

First, while the well-known trend that Java's economic relations with the outside world were heavily oriented toward trade with the Netherlands is confirmed, it is suggested that this trend began in the late eighteenth century rather than as a result of the introduction of the Cultivation System. Second, Java's coastal trade also began to develop in the late eighteenth century. This trade was conducted by European traders and Asian indigenous traders, including overseas Chinese traders settled in Java.

Third, trade with the Outer Islands declined in the late eighteenth century but resumed its expansion in the second quarter of the nineteenth century. Fourth, intra-Asian trade with the region outside insular Southeast Asia declined in the long run, along with the decline and bankruptcy of the VOC, which had successfully engaged in this branch of intra-Asian trade since the seventeenth century. Although US vessels helped in wartime around the turn of the century, Java's intra-Asian trade with areas outside of insular Southeast Asia did not grow in relative importance after Java was returned to the Dutch authorities, which preferred Java to have stronger links with the Netherlands and the Outer Islands rather than with South Asia and Japan.

Accepted: August 19, 2013

References

Primary Sources

Arsip Nasional Republik Indonesia (ANRI)

Arsip Batavia

1/2: Algemeen jaarlijksch verslag van den staat der Hoofd Baljuwage Batavia 1828/1829 [General annual report of the State of the Chief Taskmaster in Batavia 1828/1829].

2/2: Algemeen verslag 1839/1844 [General report 1839/1844].

338.3: Haven -Department Batavia- Register der in- en uitgeklaarde schepen en vaartuigen gedurende het jaar 1836 [Ports: Department of Batavia: Register of incoming and outgoing ships and vessels during the year 1836].

____: Bijlage 1: Staat der bevolking in de residentie Batavia over de jaren 1833, 1834, 1835 en 1836 [Appendix 1: State of the population in the residency of Batavia over the years 1833, 1834, 1835, and 1836].

Arsip Hoge Regering
2627: Dagregister Batavia 1770 [Diary of Batavia 1770].
2597: Dagregister Batavia 1790 [Diary of Batavia 1790].

Published Sources

Beaglehole, J. C., ed. 1955. *The Journals of Captain James Cook on His Voyages of Discovery*, *The Voyage of the Endeavour, 1768–1771*. Cambridge: Hakluyt Society at the University Press.

Statistics

Bruijn Kops, George François de. 1858. *Statistiek van den handel en de scheepvaart op Java en Madura sedert 1825* [Statistics of the trade and the shipping in Java and Madura since 1825], 2 vols. Batavia: Lange.

Directeur der Middelen en Domeinen. 1847. *Verslag van den handel, de scheepvaart en de inkomende en uitgaande regten op Java en Madura over den jaar 1846* [Report of the trade, the shipping and the import and export duties in Java and Madura over the year 1846]. Batavia: Lands-drukkerij.

Directeur van 's Lands Middelen en Domeinen. 1837. *Verslag van den handel, de scheepvaart alsmede van de inkomende en uitgaande regten op Java en Madura over den jaar 1836* [Report of the trade, the shipping together with import and export duties in Java and Madura over the year 1836]. Batavia: Lands Drukkerij.

————. 1828. *Verslag van den handel, scheepvaart en inkomende en uitgaande regten op Java en Madura in het jaar 1826* [Report of the trade, shipping and import and export duties in Java and Madura in the year 1826]. Batavia: Lands Drukkerij.

Knaap, Gerrit J. 1989. *Changing Economy in Indonesia*, Vol. 9: *Transport 1819–1940*. Amsterdam: Royal Tropical Institute.

Korthals Altes, W. L. 1991. *Changing Economy in Indonesia*, Vol. 12a: *General Trade Statistics 1822–1940*. Amsterdam: Royal Tropical Institute.

Books and Articles

Abeyasekere, Susan. 1987. *Jakarta: A History*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Andaya, Leonard Y. 1995. The Bugis-Makassar Diasporas. *Journal of the Malaysian Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society* 68(1): 119–138.

Blussé, Leonard. 2008. *Visible Cities: Canton, Nagasaki, and Batavia and the Coming of the Americans*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press.

————. 1986. *Strange Company: Chinese Settlers, Mestizo Women and the Dutch in VOC Batavia*. Dordrecht: Foris Publications.

Breman, Jan. 2010. *Koloniaal profijt van onvrije arbeid: Het Preanger stelsel van gedwongen koffieteelt op Java* [Colonial profit of unfree labor: Preanger system of forced coffee cultivation in Java]. Amsterdam: Amsterdam University Press.

De Klerck, E. S. 1975. *History of the Netherlands East Indies*, 2 vols. Amsterdam: B.M. Israël.

Elson, R. E. 1984. *Javanese Peasants and the Colonial Sugar Industry: Impact and Change in an East Java Residency, 1830–1940*. Singapore: Oxford University Press.

Furber, Holden. 1976. *Rival Empires of Trade in the Orient 1600–1800*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

Gaastra, Femme S. 2003. *The Dutch East India Company: Expansion and Decline*. Zutphen: Walburg Pers.

Houben, Vincent J. H. 2002a. The Pre-modern Economies of the Archipelago. In *The Emergence of a National Economy: An Economic History of Indonesia, 1800–2000*, edited by Howard Dick *et al.*,

pp. 35–55. Leiden: KITLV Press.

————. 2002b. Java in the 19th Century: Consolidation of a Territorial State. In *The Emergence of a National Economy: An Economic History of Indonesia, 1800–2000*, edited by Howard Dick *et al.*, pp. 56–81. Leiden: KITLV Press.

Jacobs, Els M. 2006. *Merchant in Asia: The Trade of the Dutch East India Company during the Eighteenth Century*. Leiden: CNWS Publications.

Kanai Madoka 金井　圓. 1986. *Nichiran Koshoshi no Kenkyu* 日蘭交渉史の研究 [Studies in Dutch-Japanese historical relations]. Kyoto: Shibunkaku Shuppan.

Knaap, Gerrit J. 1996. *Shallow Waters, Rising Tide: Shipping and Trade in Java around 1775*. Leiden: KITLV Press.

Knaap, Gerrit; and Sutherland, Heather. 2004. *Monsoon Traders: Ships, Skippers and Commodities in Eighteenth-Century Makassar*. Leiden: KITLV Press.

Kraan, Alfons van der. 1996. Anglo-Dutch Rivalry in the Java Cotton Trade, 1811–30. *Indonesia Circle* 68: 35–64.

Kwee, Hui Kian. 2006. *The Political Economy of Java's Northeast Coast, c.1740–1800: Elite Synergy*. Leiden: Brill.

Liu, Yong. 2007. *The Dutch East India Company's Tea Trade with China, 1757–1781*. Leiden: Brill.

Niel, Robert van. 2005. *Java's Northeast Coast, 1740–1840: A Study in Colonial Encroachment and Dominance*. Leiden: CNWS Publications.

Ohashi Atsuko 大橋厚子. 2010. *Sekai Shisutemu to Chiiki Shakai: Nishi Jawa ga Eta Mono Ushinatta Mono 1700–1830* 世界システムと地域社会——西ジャワが得たもの失ったもの 1700–1830 [The world system and a local society: Gains and losses of West Java, 1700–1830]. Kyoto: Kyoto Daigaku Gakujutsu Shuppankai.

Reid, Anthony; and Fernando, Radin. 1996. Shipping on Melaka and Singapore as an Index of Growth, 1760–1840. In "Asia and Europe: Commerce, Colonialism and Cultures," edited by M. N. Pearson and I. B. Watson. Special Issue, *South Asia: Journal of South Asian Studies* 19(1): 59–84.

Riddell, Peter G. 2001. Arab Migrants and Islamization in the Malay World during the Colonial Period. *Indonesia and the Malay World* 29(84): 113–128.

Shimada, Ryuto. 2011. Dutch Commercial Networks in Asia in Transition toward the Age of the Pax-Britannica, 1740–1830. *The East Asian Journal of British History* 1: 29–40.

————. 2006. *The Intra-Asian Trade in Japanese Copper by the Dutch East India Company during the Eighteenth Century*. Leiden: Brill.

Souza, George Bryan. 1986. *The Survival of Empire: Portuguese Trade and Society in China and the South China Sea 1630–1754*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Sugihara, Kaoru. 2009. The Resurgence of Intra-Asian Trade, 1800–1850. In *How India Clothed the World: The World of South Asian Textiles, 1500–1850*, edited by Giorgio Riello and Tirthankar Roy (with collaboration of Om Prakash and Kaoru Sugihara), pp. 139–169. Leiden: Brill.

Tarling, Nicholas. 1992. The Establishment of the Colonial Régimes. In *The Cambridge History of Southeast Asia*, Vol. 2, Part 1: *From c.1800 to the 1930s*, edited by Nicholas Tarling, pp. 1–74. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Webster, Anthony. 1998. *Gentlemen Capitalists: British Imperialism in South East Asia 1770–1890*. London: Tauris Academic Studies.

Tropical Products Out, British Cotton In: Trade in the Dutch Outer Islands Ports, 1846–69

Atsushi Ota*

This paper discusses the trade structure in the Dutch Outer Islands ports, in which the Dutch checked the volume and value of traded items in order to levy customs duty and created trade statistics in the Indonesian Archipelago outside Java and Madura. Although these ports do not include those in independent ports such as those in Aceh and Bali, the statistics contain precious information on the entire imports and exports of each port. Analyzing this set of statistics, this paper argues that the Dutch Outer Islands ports continued to export China-bound (partly Southeast Asia-bound) tropical products, such as pepper, forest products, and other kinds of local products, as well as colonial products such as coffee. On the other hand, these ports imported increasing amounts of British cotton goods after the Anglo-Dutch tariff arrangement in the 1840s. In this way the existing China-oriented trade and the new colonial trade, linked to Western capitalism, interacted and combined with each other. This transborder network beyond the Dutch sphere of influence was a source of the strength that the regions around these ports maintained, in the form of a steady development of trade.

Keywords: trade structure, Dutch Outer Islands, China-oriented trade, non-colonial products

Introduction

There is a consensus among scholars that Southeast Asian trade grew greatly in the period around 1760–1850, that is, before modern trade expansion began. Many scholars identify the China factor as a driving force in this trade growth, associating it with increasing junk trade and Chinese migration (Reid 1997b; Trocki 1997; Wang and Ng 2004; Tagliacozzo and Chang 2011). Indeed, Anthony Reid and Leonard Blussé coined the term

* 太田　淳, Graduate School of Letters, Hiroshima University, 1-2-3 Kagamiyama, Higashi-Hiroshima 739-8522, Japan
e-mail: ota@hiroshima-u.ac.jp

"the Chinese century," to emphasize the crucial importance of the China factor in eighteenth- and nineteenth-century Southeast Asia. They share the notion that Chinese trade and migration increased after the successive loosening of the Qing maritime ban in the years 1683–1754. While Reid does not comment on the course of trade after 1850, Blussé suggests that Chinese trade started to interact with Western imperialism after the establishment of Singapore in 1819 (Blussé 1999, 128; Reid 2004, 23–32). However, it is not clear how Chinese trade interacted with Western imperialism after 1819, and what sort of trade structure was created as a result. Consequently, it is not clear how the Chinese century ended.

In relation to this fact, scholarly views on the role of China-oriented trade in nineteenth-century Southeast Asia remain divided. "China-oriented trade" refers to trade in China-bound commodities, which were hardly related to modern industry and were collected, cultivated, or transported not only by Chinese but also by Southeast Asians. Typical commodities in this type of trade consisted of marine products such as sea cucumber and tortoiseshell, forest products such as rattan and camphor, and other products such as pepper, tin, and birds' nests. On the one hand, a number of scholars have recently emphasized the continuity of the China-oriented trade into the nineteenth century and beyond. Eric Tagliacozzo and the authors in his edited volume have demonstrated this position (Tagliacozzo 2004; Tagliacozzo and Chang 2011). On the other hand, there is a view that assumes that the trade structure was transformed fundamentally in the nineteenth century, and that the China-oriented trade was of little quantitative importance. This view is strongly held by specialists in the western part of the Malay-Indonesian Archipelago, where the launch of full-scale colonial rule was more marked than in other areas with the establishment of British Singapore in 1819 and the start of the Cultivation System in Dutch Java in 1830, events that caused the trade in products for the Western market to skyrocket (Elson [1992] 1999, 133). Thomas Lindblad notes that the export of natural products from Sumatra, Kalimantan, and some other islands to China was "minor" in the nineteenth century (Lindblad 2002, 101).

These differences derive in part from the gap in source materials. While the export of colonial products—mass-produced agricultural products and fossil materials for mass consumption in modern industry and the modern lifestyle, such as sugar, crude oil, and coffee—was well recorded, non-colonial China-bound exports were rarely included in statistics. Reid and other scholars have made enormous efforts to collect precious but fragmental quantitative information on the exports of several non-colonial products. However, nobody has yet presented a set of statistical data that show the geographic composition of imports and exports, as well as the composition of colonial and non-colonial products.

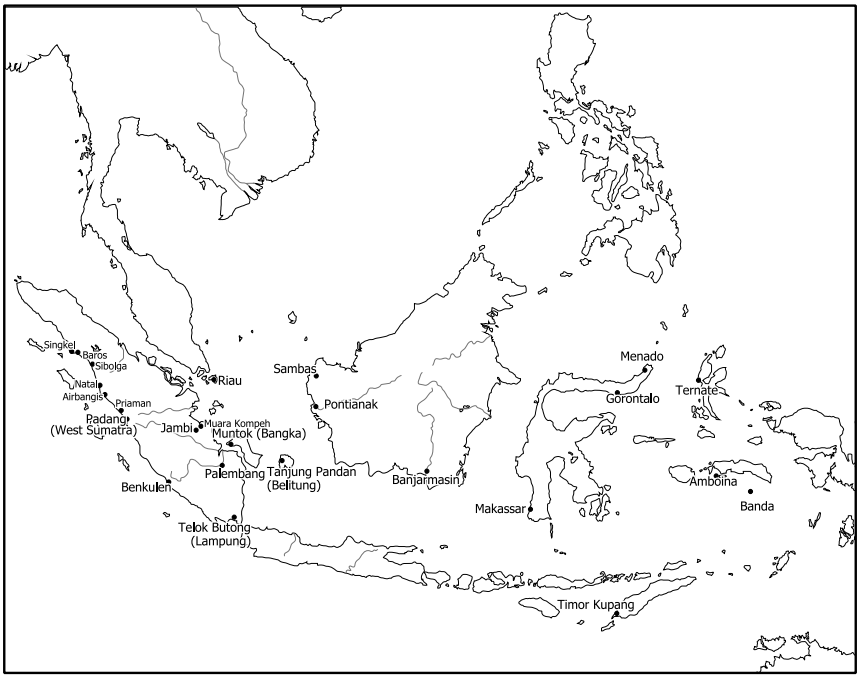


Fig. 1 Dutch Outer Islands Ports, 1846–69

Notes: 1. The ports of Singkel, Baros, Sibolga, Natal, Airbangis, Priaman, Padang, and Benkulen are put together as "West Sumatra" in the original data from 1846 to 1865. After 1866 Benkulen becomes an independent category, while the other ports remain in "West Sumatra."
2. Muara Kompeh is put together with Palembang in the original data from 1846 to 1847, while the latter becomes an independent category after 1848.
3. The original data of 1846–59 put Amboina, Ternate, Banda, and Gorontalo together as "the Maluku Islands." The first three ports appear as independent categories in the original data, while Gorontalo disappears after 1860.
4. Telok Butong (Lampung), Benkulen, and Tanjung Pandan (Belitung) appear as independent categories in the original data only after 1866.
5. Banjarmasin includes information on nearby Sambit in the original data for several years.

This paper aims to discuss the statistics of a relatively small part of nineteenth-century Southeast Asian trade: the trade in the Dutch Outer Islands ports during the period 1846–69. The Dutch Outer Islands ports are taken here as the ports (not territories) in which the Dutch checked the volume and value of traded items to levy customs duty and created trade statistics in the Indonesian Archipelago outside Java and Madura. These ports, indicated in Fig. 1, do not include those in strong, trade-rich independent states such as Aceh, nor do they include important ports in North Sumatra, Bali, and Lombok. The trade in the Dutch Outer Islands ports thus constituted only a part of the trade conducted in the areas later called, in a very Java-centric way, the "Outer Islands"—Sumatra, Dutch Kalimantan, Sulawesi, the Lesser Sunda Islands, the Maluku Islands,

and their neighboring islands.

Nevertheless, analysis of the trade in these ports is important because this set of trade statistics, systematically created in these ports, contains comprehensive information on the entire imports and exports that Dutch officials recorded in each port, including rarely recorded marine and forest products bound for China and parts of Southeast Asia. With this data we can discuss the structure of trade in these ports spread over the coasts of Sumatra, Riau, Bangka, Belitung, Kalimantan, Sulawesi, Timor, and the Maluku Islands. Previous studies have tended to focus on a particular kind of colonial or non-colonial export, emphasizing the link with the export destinations of the discussed product, without discussing much about imports. The trade statistics of the Dutch Outer Islands ports, by contrast, include information on both exports and imports. The statistics also reveal that these ports exported various kinds of products, both colonial and non-colonial, respectively bound for the West and China (and Southeast Asia). With this data set it is also possible to quantitatively compare the scale of trade of these ports with the trade in Java ports, as the statistics were made in a standardized format in the Dutch-controlled regions. These features make it possible for us to gain a better picture of the trade conducted in this part of the archipelago.

The trade statistics for the Dutch Outer Islands ports in the years 1846–69 that are used in this paper, created at the Department of Finance in Batavia (Batavia Departement van Financien), have never been fully utilized in previous studies. The most basic publication series of statistics in colonial Indonesia, *Changing Economy in Indonesia* (Korthals Altes 1991), has the Outer Islands statistics only after 1874. In addition, these Outer Islands statistics show only total exports and imports in goods, gold coins, and silver coins; they do not show any details about the trade in particular products and ports. By contrast, the original data referred to in this study contain much richer information about the trade per product in each port. By analyzing this series of data, this study reveals the composition of trade commodities in each port and their geographical differences in various ports.

The period 1846–69 has been chosen because the oldest records in a standardized format were created during these years. After this period the format was significantly changed, so that it is impossible to know certain important information such as the original places of import and final export destinations. Around 1870 the export of colonial products, such as tobacco in North Sumatra, rapidly increased; therefore, this data set will show interesting features of the trade in the insufficiently studied decades. Howard W. Dick has argued that a large part of the Indonesian Archipelago was part of Southeast Asia—without being fully integrated into the Dutch East Indies—before the 1870s, when the colonial economy started to penetrate it (Dick 1990; 1993). This paper will examine

Dick's argument by discussing the data collected some two decades before 1870.

Through these discussions, this paper argues that China-bound non-colonial exports continued to develop in pace with the expanding trade in colonial products, while Western textiles came to occupy an increasingly large part of the imports in the Dutch Outer Islands ports. In this way China-oriented trade interacted with Western capitalism, and a new trade structure, which combined the existing export pattern and new Western factors, emerged in the nineteenth century.

Formation of China-Oriented Trade Structure

Although Sino-Southeast Asian trade had been flourishing since ancient times, scholars agree that it grew strongly after the mid-eighteenth century. The trade growth was closely related to changes in Chinese society. First, China needed more staple food, as a result of the remarkable expansion in its population.[1] As the Qing government attempted to import rice from Southeast Asia by liberalizing trade policy, Chinese junks transported increasing amounts of rice from Ayutthaya (later Bangkok) and Saigon from the early eighteenth century, and also from Manila, Bali, and Lombok after the early nineteenth century (Viraphol 1977, 70–120, 140–159; Cushman [1993] 2000, 65–95; Reid 1997a, 11–14; 2004, 22–24; Blussé 1999, 121–128; Sutherland 2000, 472).

Moreover, people in economically advanced areas such as the mid- and downstream Yangzi regions increasingly demanded Southeast Asian products such as tin, pepper, birds' nests, and marine and forest products (Rowe 1998, 179). Tin was used for tea containers and for burning imitation paper notes during rituals, while rattan was used for a variety of purposes, including furniture making. The demand for these products can be related to the growing "consumer society," and the consumption of Southeast Asian exotic primary products must have been a sort of "Middle class luxury," as Kenneth Pomeranz has suggested. It was also in the eighteenth century that royal cuisine spread among a wider strata of people. The boom in commercialized eating places might have stimulated the consumption of Southeast Asian ingredients (McNeill 1994, 325–326; Pomeranz 2000, 114, 142, 151, 158). Trade in sea cucumber started only in the late seventeenth century, and it expanded into a business of considerable scale in the mid-eighteenth century (Sutherland 2000). Edible products such as shark's fin, birds' nests, and sea cucumber were still high-priced, but the availability of a wide range of goods with

1) According to James Lee, the population of China increased from about 150 million in 1700 to 400 million in 1850 (Lee 1982: 294–295).

different prices exported from various ports in Southeast Asia (Milburn [1813] 1999, Vol. 2, 388–433) indicates that people from various strata consumed them. Changing lifestyles in the economically advanced areas of China impacted the pattern of Sino-Southeast Asian trade.

It was the migration of Chinese workers that enabled the significant increase in the Southeast Asian production of certain China-bound products, such as tin and pepper, as well as gold and gambier, which were also partly circulated in Southeast Asia, during the eighteenth century. Chinese miners, who had developed copper and silver in Yunnan for domestic coinage, further extended their activities beyond the borders into regions having similar resources in the northern hills of present-day Burma, Laos, and Vietnam by the mid-eighteenth century. After the mid-eighteenth century, tin mines in Bangka and Kelantan, Perak, and later Selangor on the Malay Peninsula became sites of systematic exploitation after the large-scale migration of Chinese (mainly Hakka) miners, often at the request of local rulers. Teochew and Hakka migrants also exploited gold mines in West Kalimantan after the mid-eighteenth century. Miners organized their joint enterprises called *kongsi*, which often became quite independent from local states (Trocki 1997, 88–94; Blussé 1999, 123; Reid 2004, 24–25; 2011, 24–30). Chinese migrants began pepper cultivation on a large scale in Brunei, Riau, Terengganu, Phuket, and Chantaburi (southeast corner of Siam) in the mid- to late eighteenth century, although it was Acehnese growers who expanded pepper production much more dramatically after the 1790s.[2] Gambier, an astringent obtained from the gum of a Sumatran shrub, was another product cultivated on a large scale by Chinese workers in Riau in the late eighteenth century, and later also in Singapore. Chinese sugar production increased in Siam in the early nineteenth century, stimulated by the immigration of Teochew cultivators from the Swatow region, especially in Nakhonchaisi in the Southeast (Reid 1997b, 72–75; 2004, 26–28; Trocki 1997, 88–90; Bulbeck *et al.* 1998, 118).

Apart from miners and agricultural laborers, an increasing number of Chinese traders sailed from the Fujian and Guangdong coasts for Southeast Asian seas in the eighteenth century. Following the loosening of the Qing maritime bans, junks set sail to various places in Southeast Asia, such as North and Central Vietnam, Saigon, Hatien, Bangkok, Melaka and other ports on the Malay Peninsula, Bagansiapiapi and other ports in Sumatra, Riau-Lingga, Brunei and other ports in Kalimantan, Makassar, Sulu, Manila, and Penang, although by 1840 their main destination was Singapore. Chinese junks based in Bangkok and Saigon also joined the trade between Southeast Asian ports and south

2) Aceh's exports rapidly increased to peak at 9,000 tons in 1824, and US ships provided the pepper for China, the United States, and Europe (Bulbeck *et al.* 1998: 87–91).

China. Products from Chinese-run mines and agricultural gardens were almost exclusively loaded on Chinese junks. Chinese traders also transported marine, forest, and other tropical products from various Southeast Asian ports to the south China coast, in return for porcelain, silk, ironware, and various other Chinese household items. They preferred a "free port" outside the Dutch sphere of influence for this trade, because they disliked Dutch customs and interventions, and more importantly because the commodities they needed were not much available in Dutch ports as the Dutch were not interested in those kinds of products (Reid 1997b, 62–67; 2004, 22–28; Blussé 1999, 121–127; Tagliacozzo 2004, 40–43).

In response to the arrival of an increasing number of Chinese junks, Southeast Asian traders brought marine and forest products—which were in demand in China—from their producing regions to various transit ports in Southeast Asia (Tagliacozzo 2011, 434–437). Among the various groups of Southeast Asian traders, Malays, Iranun, and especially Bugis played an important role in collecting marine and forest products. After the VOC-Makassar war in the 1660s, Bugis had migrated to scattered places in the Malay-Indonesian Archipelago and created their settlements throughout insular Southeast Asia, such as the east and west coasts of Kalimantan, the Malay Peninsula, and the Riau-Lingga Islands (Andaya 1995). Making use of their extended networks between these settlements and their homeland in South Sulawesi, they transported marine and forest products to transit ports throughout insular Southeast Asia from Junk Ceylon to Sulu (Lewis 1970, 115–116; Sutherland 2000, 452–459). Bugis and other Southeast Asian traders also redistributed Chinese, Indian, and Western products as well as Southeast Asian products, such as gambier, a material for betel chewing, and die materials including wax for textile production, for local consumption to various places in Southeast Asia.

Another factor that stimulated Sino-Southeast Asian trade was British country traders coming from India.[3] They also collected products that were in demand in China and brought them to Canton (Guangzhou), the only port in Qing China that was open to Western traders, in order to facilitate the British tea trade there (Reid 1997b, 61; Milburn [1813] 1999, Vol. 2, 388–433). As European traders competed fiercely in the booming tea trade between south China and northwest Europe, it became important for them to obtain commodities in Asia that were in demand in China, because they did not have attractive trade items from their home countries apart from precious silver. Country traders visiting a number of ports throughout insular Southeast Asia played an important

3) Country traders were private Asia-based traders who conducted business in Asia, mainly between India, Southeast Asia, and China, under license from the British government in India. Although their vessels bore the British flag, they were crewed predominantly by Indians with a few European officers.

role in collecting items that were in demand in China, in return for opium, cotton and cotton cloth, gunpowder, and arms. Opium was especially in demand among Chinese laborers in mines and agricultural gardens (Trocki 2011, 85, 89). According to trade statistics in Canton, tin and pepper always accounted for a constant share of the country traders' imports to Canton, although their main Asian commodities were Indian cotton and opium (Pritchard 1936, 174–180, 401–402; Ota 2006, 117–123). In Southeast Asia, marine and forest products were also important components of country traders' business, although the trade amount is not clear (Lewis 1970, 117–120; Trocki 1979, 8–17; Warren 1981, 38–66; Vos 1993, 121–126; Tagliacozzo 2004, 37–40).

The development of Sino-Southeast Asian trade also meant a reorganization of the Southeast Asian economy. Many places became producing regions to support the growing consumption in China. Growing Chinese demand for Southeast Asian tropical products as well as new trade items such as Indian opium and Western armaments transformed the age-old Sino-Southeast Asian trade in the mid-eighteenth century.

Qualification of Data

The following sections discuss the trade structure in the Dutch Outer Islands ports in the years 1846–69, examining the trade statistics created in these ports (Batavia Departement van Financien 1851–70).[4] The discussion starts with an examination of the coverage and nature of this data set, by comparing it with other statistical sources.

Table 1 indicates the exports from the Indonesian Archipelago outside Java in selected years from 1846 to 1869. Row (a) shows the data created in Java on imports from the areas W. L. Korthals Altes called "the Outer Islands" to Java and Madura (Korthals Altes 1991). In fact, this category consists of Sumatra, Dutch Kalimantan, Sulawesi, Bali, the Maluku Islands, and others (not specified). Apparently this category includes Bali, which was not a part of Dutch Outer Islands ports, and it is likely that it includes independent states in North Sumatra including Aceh, because there was little reason for Dutch customs officers in Java to have turned away ships from these states. Row (d) shows data created in Dutch Outer Islands ports on the exports from these ports to Java and Madura. At first sight rows (a) and (d) seem to indicate almost the same trade between almost identical islands, but the exports indicated in row (d) are much smaller

4) As Table 1 shows, the statistical sources of the Dutch Outer Islands ports use the terms "import" and "export" for trade with Java and Madura, as if they were foreign countries. As this usage of these terms probably reflects contemporary people's perceptions, this paper indicates the trade between these regions as import and export.

Table 1 Exports from Various Parts of the Indonesian Archipelago, 1846–69 (Dutch Guilders)

	1846	1850	1859	1869
(a) Imports from Sumatra, Dutch Kalimantan, Sulawesi, Bali, the Maluku Islands, and others to Java and Madura (based on Java statistics)*	9,115,000	9,386,000	17,148,000	15,895,000
(b) Imports from Sumatra, entire Borneo, Bali, Riau, Lombok, and Sulawesi to Singapore (based on Singapore statistics)**	4,420,744	3,243,465	5,107,290	6,686,776
(c) Total	13,535,744	12,629,465	22,255,290	22,581,776
Exports from Dutch Outer Islands ports (based on Dutch Outer Islands statistics)***				
(d) To Java and Madura	2,639,657	3,004,989	4,271,764	7,183,841
(e) To the Straits Settlements	2,447,840	4,027,831	3,268,511	6,423,310
(f) To Europe and the United States	238,138	369,295	4,635,894	9,218,161
(g) To India and West Asia	143,406	47,806	68,604	14,677
(h) To China	336,355	619,663	616,749	544,899
(i) To Siam	0	20,157	265,711	0
(j) To Manila	0	0	25,228	294,492
(k) To other places	0	1,547	12,495	59,420
(l) Total	5,805,396	8,091,288	13,164,956	23,738,800
(m) Total exports from Java†	60,799,000	61,635,000	113,502,000	118,308,000

Sources and notes:
* Korthals Altes (1991: 82–84).
** Wong (1960: 221–223, 228–230). Riau, Bali, Lombok, and Sumbawa are included in Java in the statistics after 1845.
*** Batavia Departement van Financien (1851–70).
† Korthals Altes (1991: 62–64).

than those shown in row (a). This means that a large number of ships from these islands bound for Java and Madura did not go through official checks in their departing ports. Ships from Aceh, Bali, and other independent states certainly came without any Dutch checks. The data set used for row (d) thus covers only a small part of the trade. In fact, if we compare the data in rows (a) and (d), this data set is likely to have covered about 30–40 percent of the actual trade between the above-mentioned islands and Java and Madura. We will return to this point later when we discuss the composition of trade.

Row (b) of Table 1 indicates data created in Singapore on imports from Sumatra, Borneo, Bali, Riau, Lombok, and Sulawesi. These figures were obtained by converting the original data in Spanish dollars to Dutch guilders at the rate of 1 Spanish dollar to 2.55 Dutch guilders (Cowan 1950, 21). The figures in row (d) are relatively close to those in row (e), the data created in the Dutch Outer Islands ports on the exports from these ports to the Straits Settlements. However, this fact casts doubt on the accuracy of the figures in row (b). There are several reasons to assume that the actual imports from the indicated

islands to Singapore were larger than shown here. Rows (d) and (e) show that almost the same amounts were exported from the Dutch Outer Islands ports to Java and Madura on the one hand and to the Straits Settlements on the other. It is unlikely that in the Dutch Outer Islands ports, ships bound for either the Straits Settlements or Java and Madura were subjected to greater official checks than other ships; therefore, Singapore perhaps imported almost the same amounts as Java did as shown in row (a). Aceh must have exported a larger amount of items to Singapore than to Java, considering its stronger trade relationship with Singapore than with Java, although it sold its largest export commodity, pepper, mostly to US ships. These observations seem to suggest that the trade indicated in row (b) was not accurately recorded for some reason in the free port of Singapore, where no customs duty was levied. We should assume that the actual trade between the islands in row (b) and Singapore was greater than indicated here, and the trade that went through official checks in Dutch Outer Islands ports (row [e]) was only a part of it.

Importantly, total exports from the Dutch Outer Islands ports (row [l]) grew more sharply than the exports indicated in Java and Singapore statistics (rows [a] and [b]). This suggests that the growing figures in row (l) mean not only a trade increase but also a strengthening of Dutch control on trade. In another words, as the Dutch checked more and more departing ships, trade figures appear to be growing more sharply than they actually were. Thus, caution must be taken to qualify the meaning of the trade increase indicated in the data set, although it is still possible to assume that trade did increase, considering the steady increase in the figures that appear in Java and Singapore statistics (rows [a] and [b]).

In spite of these qualifications, this data set is useful for understanding the nature of trade in regard to trade amounts in different ports, the diversity of traded commodities, export destinations, and original places of import. As mentioned before, the original information of this data set does not seem to be strongly biased with respect to the characterization of trade by geographical and commodity composition, apart from the lack of information on smuggling, a problem for any official trade records. If there is any bias in this data set, it may have underestimated China-bound non-colonial products, because Dutch officers were hardly interested in such products. It is very important that this data set includes the above-mentioned information, such as trade amounts in different ports and diverse trade commodities. Using this information, the following sections will focus on breakouts of trade in terms of factors such as trade items and export destinations rather than the trend of trade growth, which cannot be analyzed precisely for the above-mentioned reason.

Export Commodities in Outer Islands Ports

Fig. 2 and Table 2 show major export commodities in each of the Dutch Outer Islands ports. Scales of trade were very different among these ports. West Sumatra (mostly Padang), the largest exporter, occupied 31.8 percent of the total in 1869, followed by Makassar (19.3 percent), Riau (11 percent), and Belitung (8.6 percent). In the west of Makassar, trade gradually became concentrated in larger ports such as Padang, Riau, Palembang, Belitung, and Banjarmasin. In the eastern part, Menado became an important port largely because of coffee exports, while ports in the Maluku Islands and Timor were left out of the lucrative trade in the other areas.

As Table 3 shows, it is possible to organize the export commodities roughly into two categories: (1) products for Western countries (Europe and the United States), and (2) products for China (partly for Southeast Asia). The latter category can be further divided into (a) Chinese products and (b) local products, although there are not a few exceptions, as explained below. Products for Western countries were produced on a

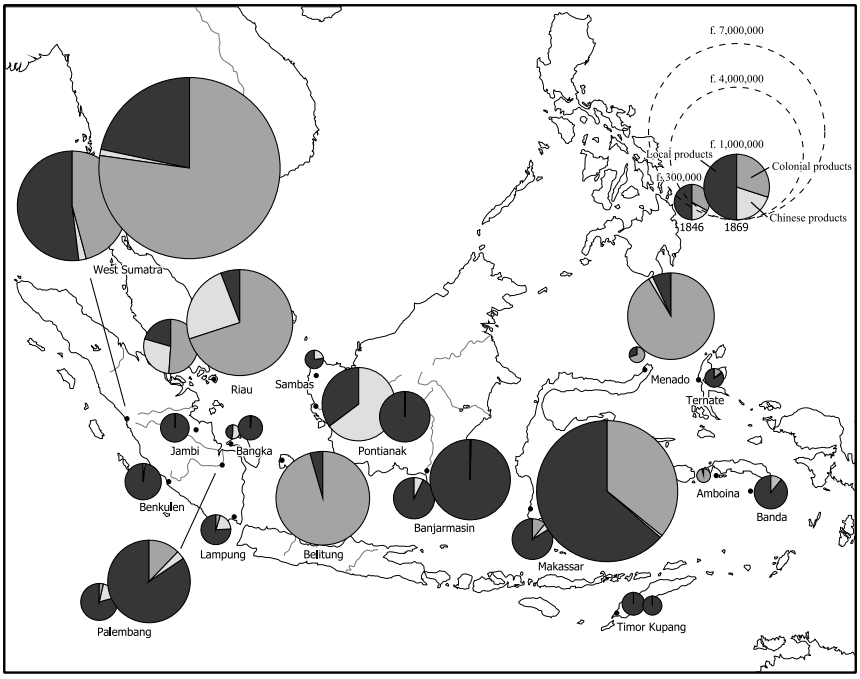


Fig. 2 Exports from the Dutch Outer Islands Ports in 1846 and 1869

Source: Table 2.

Note: Places without data for 1846 indicate information on 1869 only.

Table 2 Exports from the Dutch Outer Islands Ports, 1846–69 (Dutch Guilders)

	West Sumatra				Benkulen	Lampung	Jambi	
	1846	1850	1859	1869	1869	1869	1850	1869
Coffee	1,190,783	2,380,450	4,067,803	5,710,706	–	10,660	–	–
Cacao	–	–	–	–	–	–	–	–
Tobacco	74,162	102,399	15,516	3,599	12,235	–	110	–
Pepper	27,723	80,148	183,139	68,017	5,005	42,291	–	1
Gambier	19,445	35,997	15,702	19,704	–	–	–	165
Gold	9,404	285,317	38,423	2,220	600	–	–	–
Tin	–	610	–	–	–	–	–	–
Marine products	12,386	–	3,634	11,604	420	45	128	–
Forest products	590,868	200,762	473,924	870,418	170,699	10,301	39,471	194,352
Others	818,925	1,047,798	315,879	709,212	127,309	153,423	566	6,879
Total	2,743,696	4,133,481	5,114,020	7,395,480	316,268	216,720	40,275	201,397

	Palembang				Bangka			
	1846	1850	1859	1869	1846	1850	1859	1869
Coffee	3,469	–	16,906	98,592	–	–	–	–
Cacao	–	–	–	3	–	–	–	–
Tobacco	8,664	8,457	37,439	94,847	–	–	–	2,340
Pepper	–	7,489	1,472	–	–	–	–	–
Gambier	16,834	7,262	30,942	52,204	–	–	–	–
Gold	38,644	16,840	20,430	–	–	–	–	–
Tin	–	–	–	3	28,089	21,285	–	–
Marine products	–	2,384	300	5,328	3,383	10,900	180	–
Forest products	143,550	114,538	316,250	468,972	13,162	2,096	8,748	16,892
Others	115,800	200,357	439,114	843,912	8,945	54,094	18,683	127,772
Total	326,961	357,327	862,853	1,563,861	53,579	88,375	27,611	147,004

	Belitung	Riau				Sambas		
	1869	1846	1850	1859	1869	1850	1859	1869
Coffee	–	150	1,400	–	175	187	–	–
Cacao	–	–	–	–	–	–	–	–
Tobacco	284	5,584	4,628	320	–	17,516	270	698
Pepper	–	193,806	174,295	375,887	616,119	–	–	–
Gambier	–	346,035	370,303	792,031	1,796,110	270	–	50
Gold	–	–	–	–	–	290,700	32,750	20,114
Tin	1,912,148	–	–	–	–	–	–	–
Marine products	40,962	12,250	900	–	600	6,567	–	–
Forest products	15,648	33,896	60,542	76,502	52,389	5,186	153,100	40,416
Others	31,050	94,669	127,741	359,026	96,109	96,761	5,965	27,370
Total	2,000,092	686,390	739,809	1,603,766	2,561,502	417,187	192,085	88,648

Table 2-Continued

	Pontianak			Banjarmasin			
	1846	1859	1869	1846	1850	1859	1869
Coffee	–	–	–	–	–	–	489
Cacao	–	–	–	–	–	–	–
Tobacco	38,893	2,880	240	–	4,169	18,168	6,485
Pepper	–	–	–	–	–	3,664	–
Gambier	–	–	–	25,120	1,250	31,187	294
Gold	777,320	50,769	2,800	5,000	–	–	–
Tin	–	–	–	–	–	–	–
Marine products	17,200	–	–	–	–	–	–
Forest products	291,250	139,586	152,369	10,837	4,402	9,322	736,969
Others	112,985	318,334	441,455	364,341	261,760	281,971	743,896
Total	1,237,648	511,569	596,864	405,298	271,581	344,312	1,488,133

	Makassar				Menado			
	1846	1850	1859	1869	1846	1850	1859	1869
Coffee	12,411	141,576	1,291,146	1,538,861	–	–	120	1,410,737
Cacao	–	–	–	–	45,940	48,060	105,680	162,600
Tobacco	30,716	34,777	32,141	76,101	–	–	–	–
Pepper	–	–	–	120	–	–	132	–
Gambier	21,327	12,650	20,976	33,310	–	750	1,460	500
Gold	–	–	5,700	1,071	–	16,000	21,755	26,550
Tin	–	–	200	–	–	–	–	–
Marine products	131,592	658,456	636,069	807,457	4,209	27,700	62,125	35,950
Forest products	47,843	331,547	688,259	808,449	1,383	7,000	59,600	15,050
Others	152,480	452,249	863,986	1,236,870	13,768	5,220	34,808	65,556
Total	396,369	1,631,255	3,538,477	4,502,239	65,300	104,730	285,680	1,716,943

	Maluku			Amboina	Banda	Ternate
	1846	1850	1859	1869	1869	1869
Coffee	1,090	735	2,675	20,375	29,700	–
Cacao	–	–	42,648	25,620	–	12,600
Tobacco	555	7,121	6,430	4,200	–	360
Pepper	–	–	–	–	–	–
Gambier	1,126	–	13,198	–	–	1,060
Gold	–	–	11,355	–	–	1,352
Tin	–	–	–	–	–	–
Marine products	34,730	26,088	24,800	600	1,230	17,900
Forest products	14,814	13,699	21,644	1,708	1,723	16,913
Others	81,859	70,477	97,685	–	236,002	42,578
Total	134,174	118,120	220,435	52,503	268,655	92,763

Table 2-Continued

	Timor Kupang			
	1846	1850	1859	1869
Coffee	–	–	–	–
Cacao	–	–	–	–
Tobacco	–	275	–	–
Pepper	–	–	–	–
Gambier	–	–	–	–
Gold	–	–	–	–
Tin	–	–	–	–
Marine products	–	605	715	300
Forest products	123,210	52,383	137,071	53,756
Others	8,654	3,516	61,559	39,784
Total	131,864	56,779	199,345	93,840

Source: Batavia Departement van Financien (1851–70).

Notes: 1. Muara Kompeh has been included in Palembang in all the years examined.

2. In the original data of 1846–48, statistics from Sambas and Pontianak are put together. Sambas has been included in Pontianak in these years. These places appear as independent categories in the original data after 1848, while the data of 1850 do not include information on Pontianak.

Table 3 Exports from the Dutch Outer Islands Ports, 1846–69 (Dutch Guilders)

Category		1846		1850		1859		1869	
(1) Products for Western countries	Coffee	1,207,903	19.5%	2,524,348	31.7%	5,378,650	41.7%	8,820,295	37.9%
	Cacao	45,940	0.7%	48,060	0.6%	148,328	1.1%	200,823	0.9%
	Tobacco	158,574	2.6%	179,452	2.3%	113,164	0.9%	201,389	0.9%
	Tin from Belitung							1,912,148	8.2%
	Gambier from Riau	346,035	5.6%	370,303	4.7%	792,031	6.1%	1,796,110	7.7%
	Total	1,758,452	28.4%	3,122,163	39.2%	6,432,173	49.9%	12,930,765	55.5%
(2a) Chinese products	Pepper	221,529	3.6%	261,932	3.3%	564,294	4.4%	731,553	3.1%
	Gambier (not from Riau)	83,852	1.4%	58,179	0.7%	113,465	0.9%	107,287	0.5%
	Gold	830,368	13.4%	608,857	7.6%	181,182	1.4%	54,707	0.2%
	Tin (not from Belitung)	28,089	0.5%	21,895	0.3%	200	0.0%	3	0.0%
	Total	1,163,838	18.8%	950,863	11.9%	859,141	6.7%	893,550	3.8%
(2b) Local products	Marine products	215,750	3.5%	733,728	9.2%	727,823	5.6%	922,396	4.0%
	Forest products	1,270,813	20.6%	831,626	10.4%	2,084,006	16.2%	3,627,024	15.6%
	Others	1,772,426	28.7%	2,320,539	29.2%	2,797,010	21.7%	4,929,177	21.2%
	Total	3,258,989	52.7%	3,885,893	48.8%	5,608,839	43.5%	9,478,597	40.7%
Total		6,181,279	100.0%	7,958,919	100.0%	12,900,153	100.0%	23,302,912	100.0%

Source: Batavia Departement van Financien (1851–70).

large scale under the supervision of the colonial government or Western (mostly Dutch) private enterprises. Coffee cultivation in West Sumatra was a typical example of products promoted by the government, although coffee gardens were also opened on local initiatives in North and Central Sulawesi (the Minahasa and Toraja regions). Cacao and tobacco

cultivation also started in Western-funded plantations in several places, although the volume of production remained small during the period under study (Table 2). Chinese products were produced by Chinese labor, often in the *kongsi* style: for example, pepper and gambier in Riau, gold in West Kalimantan (upstream of Pontianak), and tin in Bangka. Meanwhile, a variety of products collected by Southeast Asians without farming, cultivation, and capital investment fall into the category of local products. These were largely marine and forest products exported mainly to China and parts of Southeast Asia. The "others" in the local products (Table 3) are those difficult to categorize. They include items such as leather and elephant tusks, for example, all collected in a similar manner. Not all the export destinations are clear in this group of products, but there is little doubt that they were not for industrial use, and that almost all of them were consumed in China and Southeast Asia.

Western impacts were important for export growth in only a few areas. Padang in West Sumatra was the largest coffee-exporting port throughout the period under study. The Dutch colonial government introduced coffee cultivation in the West Sumatran highlands, in order to stabilize local society after the end of the anti-Dutch Padri War (1821–37). Coffee production developed rapidly until around 1870 (Dobbin 1983, 235–236). Another example is tin from Belitung. The region exported a large amount of tin after 1860, when the Billiton Company financed by Dutch entrepreneurs started operations (Lindblad 2002, 95). For this reason, tin from Belitung has been placed in the category of "products for Western countries" in Table 3.

However, apart from coffee and some other cash crops, the major traded commodities in the period under study show a strong continuity from earlier periods. As Table 2 shows, they were pepper, gambier, tin, and above all marine and forest products. They were almost identical to the commodities actively exported during the Chinese century from many places in Southeast Asia to China, as discussed in the earlier section.

The continuity of export commodities, however, does not mean that ports continued to export these products in the same manner as they had done during the earlier period. On the contrary, in most places, new Western impacts and existing local and Chinese factors were inevitably intertwined.

Makassar, the second-largest port, was a typical case of such intertwined developments. The most important factor behind the prosperous trade in Makassar was the Dutch decision to make it a free port, which led to increasing visits from non-Dutch ships, foreign and local, and the growth of trade with China and Singapore (Poelinggomang 1993, 66–68; Lindblad 2002, 90). The largest export item from Makassar after the 1850s was coffee. In the Toraja highlands local people had cultivated coffee for a long time, but production increased remarkably in the mid-nineteenth century, when the Bugis opened

inland commercial routes (Yamashita 1988, 54–55). On the other hand, more than half of the Makassar exports were marine and forest products, even after the 1850s, when coffee production increased. In fact, Makassar was by far the most important (re)export center for marine products throughout the period under study (Fig. 2 and Table 2). No one has studied the collecting and trading system of marine products in Makassar in the mid-nineteenth century, but it is very possible that the eighteenth-century local network, which Heather Sutherland has discussed, kept functioning to collect almost identical products, such as sea cucumber and tortoiseshell, from the nearby waters well into the nineteenth century (Sutherland 2000; 2011).

The increase in pepper and gambier production in Riau was a combined result of Chinese and Western impacts. The production in Chinese-run gardens increased especially after the 1820s, when Singapore developed as a center for export and consumption. Gambier had been consumed in south China and Southeast Asia for betel chewing, but after the 1830s it largely went to European markets for their dyeing and tanning industries, although Chinese laborers continuously cultivated it (Elson [1992] 1999, 135; Turnbull 2009, 63). This is why gambier from Riau has been categorized with "products for Western countries" in Table 3.

Forest products and the "others" in local products were the most common commodities exported from almost all the Dutch Outer Islands ports (Table 2). In West Kalimantan, larger-scale collection of rattan and other forest products started around 1860, as Chinese and coastal Malay traders were involved in this business. They organized inland Dayak collectors in a more commercialized way (Somers Heidhues 2003). Similar developments took place in Southeast Kalimantan, although trade information from this area is not included in the data set under study (Knapen 2001).

Total exports from all the Dutch Outer Islands ports appear to have become 3.8 times larger in the data set under study during the period 1846–69 (Table 3). The largest growth took place in coffee. However, it is remarkable that the exports of local products also steadily increased. Their share in total exports shrank, but their values increased almost three times. The share of Chinese products shrank substantially, but in absolute terms the value of exports declined only slightly. The upshot was that the total value of China-bound (partly Southeast Asia-bound) local and Chinese products was still greater than exports to Western markets until 1859. In 1869, around the year coffee production reached its peak in West Sumatra (Dobbin 1983, 236), products for China and Southeast Asian markets still accounted for around 45 percent of exports, while the rest went to Europe and the United States. Exports to China and Southeast Asia may have been greater than indicated in Table 3, considering the possible bias of the data set mentioned before. Non-colonial exports from the Dutch Outer Islands ports were still much smaller

than the total exports from Java (Table 1, row [m]), which consisted mostly of colonial products. However, considering the fact that the statistics created for the Dutch Outer Islands ports covered only a part (30–40 percent, as mentioned before) of the exports from Sumatra, Kalimantan, Sulawesi, and other islands of the Indonesian Archipelago, the actual export of non-colonial products from these islands would have been 2.5 to 3.3 times larger than indicated in Table 3. Exports of China-bound local products were therefore substantial and not really "minor," as noted by Lindblad (2002).

Export Destinations

Although Dutch colonial officers always lamented that large quantities of commodities from the Outer Islands were brought not to Batavia but to Singapore, Lindblad suggests that the importance of Java as a trade partner of the Outer Islands must also be fairly assessed. Examining the trade volume in these two principal colonial ports, Lindblad argues that the trade between the Outer Islands and Java in fact steadily grew, although the former were more strongly linked to the trade rhythm in Singapore (Lindblad 1989).

Fig. 3 and Table 4 show where each of the Dutch Outer Islands ports exported their products. The total figures at the bottom of Table 4 ("All Total") indicate that the Outer Islands ports were connected to both the Straits Settlements (mostly Singapore) and Java, almost equally in volume. This fact supports Lindblad's argument.

If we focus on individual ports, however, the difference in major export destinations of each port is very large (Fig. 3 and Table 4). In principle, ports relatively close to Singapore, such as Riau, Sambas, and Pontianak, exported more to Singapore, although they still exported a certain portion to Java. Ports that had easier access to Java than to Singapore, such as Benkulen, Lampung, and Banjarmasin, were much more strongly connected to Java.

The strong connection to the Netherlands is noticeable only in West Sumatra. Its ports (mostly Padang) exported a large proportion of coffee to the Netherlands only after the early 1850s. Until then more than half of their commodities (mostly coffee) were sent to Singapore. The sudden drop in Singapore's share, replaced by the Netherlands, was apparently a result of the Dutch policy aimed at exporting as much coffee as possible to the home country.

What is also remarkable is that most of the Dutch Outer Islands ports did not have strong ties with China in the period under study. Junk traffic between the south China coast and the Indonesian Archipelago was active until around 1820 (Crawfurd 1820, Vol. 3, 180–185). Chinese traders were still actively operating in these waters, but they were

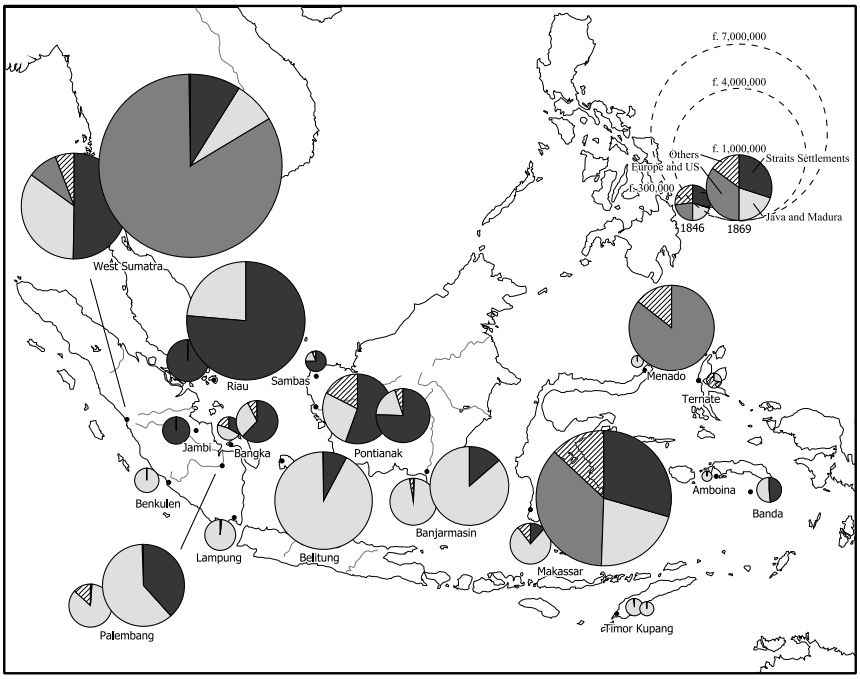


Fig. 3 Export Destinations from the Dutch Outer Islands Ports in 1846 and 1869
Source: Table 3.
Note: Places without data for 1846 indicate information on 1869 only.

now connecting the archipelago ports with Singapore. This is discussed later. Although Makassar is geographically closer to Java, its trade was more strongly connected to Singapore and other places. There is little doubt that this was a result of the aforementioned Dutch free port policy in Makassar. China reemerged as an important trade partner of Makassar by 1850, while trade ties with European countries also became stronger after the 1850s. Makassar prospered as an international transit port under the Dutch free-port policy, which was a resurgence with a similar trade pattern in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, as discussed by Sutherland (Sutherland 2000; 2011).

An interesting connection is the one between Menado and Siam and Manila (Table 4). The interregional trade in Menado should be studied further.

In this way, all of the Dutch Outer Islands ports had multiple export destinations. Although the Batavian government attempted to integrate the trade into its Java-centered network, these ports maintained their links with regions outside the Dutch sphere of influence. Maintaining multiple destinations must have helped the regions around the Dutch Outer Islands ports strengthen their ability to respond to changing market situa-

Table 4 Export Destinations of Products from Dutch Outer Islands Ports, 1846–69 (Dutch Guilders)

Destinations	West Sumatra				Benkulen	Lampung	Jambi	
	1846	1850	1859	1869	1869	1869	1850	1869
Straits Settlements	1,299,854	2,890,781	301,800	685,399		3,791	19,723	183,909
Java and Madura	892,760	1,496,954	1,015,007	558,194	154,975	229,729	6,938	
Europe and US	236,678	369,295	4,052,538	6,286,092				
India and West Asia	143,406	47,716	63,194	14,677				
China			30,752					
Siam								
Manila								
Others								
Total	2,572,698	4,804,746	5,463,291	7,544,362	154,975	233,520	26,661	183,909

	Palembang				Bangka			
	1846	1850	1859	1869	1846	1850	1859	1869
Straits Settlements	5,366	9,071		593,730	45,815	69,736	92,202	259,854
Java and Madura	378,355	181,439	585,463	943,688	63,683	74,320	116,415	125,980
Europe and US								
India and West Asia								
China	58,093	11,622	9,940	6,228	27,101	1,150	5,000	
Siam		20,157	2,641					
Manila								30,552
Others		1,547						
Total	441,814	223,836	598,044	1,543,646	136,599	145,206	213,617	416,386

	Belitung	Riau				Sambas		
	1869	1846	1850	1859	1869	1850	1859	1869
Straits Settlements	170,647	419,919	350,583	761,985	2,433,690	239,950	177,430	82,051
Java and Madura	1,995,815			919,259	746,966	65,263	18,380	20,630
Europe and US								
India and West Asia								
China	2,999							
Siam								
Manila								
Others				1,275				6,455
Total	2,169,461	419,919	350,583	1,682,519	3,180,656	305,213	195,810	109,136

	Pontianak			Banjarmasin			
	1846	1859	1869	1846	1850	1859	1869
Straits Settlements	625,835	445,223	517,209	3,735			198,029
Java and Madura	303,430	63,540	132,139	502,297	444,502	579,222	1,231,640
Europe and US							
India and West Asia							
China	196,730			13,366	65		
Siam							
Manila						3243	
Others			33,710				
Total	1,125,995	508,763	683,058	519,398	444,567	582,465	1,429,669

Table 4-Continued

	Makassar				Menado		
	1846	1850	1859	1869	1846	1859	1869
Straits Settlements	47,316	378,651	1,484,151	1,220,054			
Java and Madura	309,356	492,010	826,273	879,444	40,399	27,465	
Europe and US			583,356	1,506,728			1,425,341
India and West Asia							
China	41,065	606,826	571,057	535,672			
Siam						263,070	
Manila							239,790
Others							
Total	397,737	1,477,487	3,464,837	4,141,898	40,399	290,535	1,665,131

	Maluku			Amboina	Banda	Ternate
	1846	1850	1859	1869	1869	1869
Straits Settlements					74,947	
Java and Madura	71,713	191,040	39,039	30,460	79,400	17,004
Europe and US						
India and West Asia						
China						
Siam						
Manila			21,985			24,150
Others			11,220			19,255
Total	71,713	191,040	72,244	30,460	154,347	60,409

	Timor Kupang			
	1846	1850	1859	1869
Straits Settlements			5,720	
Java and Madura	77,664	52,523	148,205	54,781
Europe and US	1,460			
India and West Asia		90	5,410	
China				
Siam				
Manila				
Others				
Total	79,124	52,613	159,335	54,781

	All Total							
	1846		1850		1859		1869	
Straits Settlements	2,447,840	42.2%	3,958,495	49.3%	3,268,511	25.3%	6,419,519	27.5%
Java and Madura	2,639,657	45.5%	3,004,989	37.5%	4,310,803	33.3%	6,816,141	29.2%
Europe and US	238,138	4.1%	369,295	4.6%	4,635,894	35.8%	9,218,161	39.4%
India and West Asia	143,406	2.5%	47,806	0.6%	68,604	0.5%	14,677	0.1%
China	336,355	5.8%	619,663	7.7%	616,749	4.8%	544,899	2.3%
Siam	–		20,157	0.3%	2,641	0.0%	–	
Manila	–		–		25,228	0.2%	294,492	1.3%
Others	–		1,547	0.0%	12,495	0.1%	59,420	0.3%
Total	5,805,396	100.0%	8,021,952	100.0%	12,940,925	100.0%	23,367,309	100.0%

Source: Batavia Departement van Financien (1851–70).

tions. The data suggest that local and Chinese workers flexibly changed and expanded their production to the most promising products. The regions around the Dutch Outer Islands ports were thus not subjugated to the Dutch colonial economy; they expanded their transborder network not only to Singapore, but also via Makassar to non-Dutch Western countries, China, Manila, and other Southeast Asian regions. Going back to Dick's argument, "All Total" of Table 4 (at the bottom) shows that the connection with Java was weakening, with its share among export destinations reducing from more than 45 percent to less than 30 percent. This supports Dick's argument that a large part of the Indonesian Archipelago was not fully integrated into the Dutch East Indies. However, his contention that the Outer Islands were connected less strongly with Java than with other parts of Southeast Asia may be overstated. The share of the Straits Settlements as a destination from the Dutch Outer Islands ports also reduced, as exports to Europe and the United States grew rapidly, largely because of coffee production in West Sumatra and North and Central Sulawesi. The Dutch Outer Islands ports were developing multi-directional links with the Straits Settlements, Java, other parts of Southeast Asia, Europe, and the United States.

Imported Items

Fig. 4 and Table 5 indicate major imports into the Dutch Outer Islands ports. It should be noted that "European textiles" and "other European products," whose imports had been negligible until the eighteenth century, became by far the most import commodity in the nineteenth century. This was a common trend in all the Outer Islands ports, without any significant regional difference. Atsushi Kobayashi's paper in this focus explains that the largest European item reexported from Singapore to other parts of Southeast Asia was British cotton goods. Kobayashi argues that the rapid expansion of the British cotton trade was a result of the tariff arrangements between British and Dutch colonial authorities in the 1840s. The import of Indian textiles was shrinking every year as cheaper British cotton goods flooded in, while that of Indian opium became more important. This was a result of the British policy in Bengal, where the colonizer dominated and promoted opium production. Household items, including all kinds of daily-use items such as porcelain, ironware, and tobacco, were imported mostly from China and partly from Manila and Siam. These items were popular among not only Chinese immigrants but also local people.

Changes in the import commodities from the earlier period are thus remarkable, in contrast to the fact that almost identical items were continuously exported. In the earlier

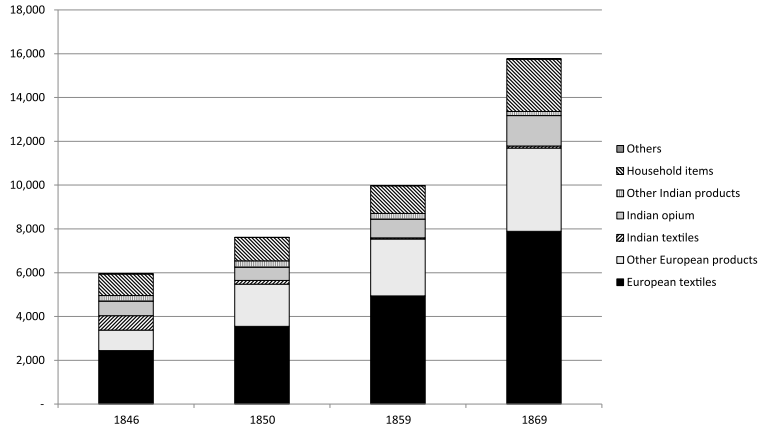


Fig. 4 Imports into the Dutch Outer Islands Ports, 1846–69 (1,000 Dutch Guilders)
Source: Table 5.

Table 5 Imports into Dutch Outer Islands Ports, 1846–69 (Dutch Guilders)

	1846	1850	1859	1869
European textiles	2,444,070	3,552,116	4,937,666	7,890,959
Other European products	938,370	1,923,033	2,602,872	3,798,573
Indian textiles	648,617	173,831	49,907	93,610
Indian opium	669,185	599,029	850,383	1,395,368
Other Indian products	254,040	294,847	265,859	184,735
Household items	991,347	1,065,595	1,259,372	2,392,448
Others	6,377	900	1,094	813
Total	5,952,006	7,609,351	9,967,153	15,756,506

Source: Batavia Departement van Financien (1851–70).

periods Chinese household items were probably the most important commodities in the Sino-Southeast Asian trade, while textiles from India and other parts of Southeast Asia were also in strong demand throughout the Indonesian Archipelago (Milburn [1813] 1999, Vol. 2, 388–433). During the period under study, however, local people were increasingly consuming cheaper British cotton goods.

As Kobayashi explains in this focus, British cotton goods were distributed from Singapore to other parts of Southeast Asia. In other words, cheap British cotton goods were powerful commodities that played an important role in the rise of Singapore into by far the most important hub in insular Southeast Asia, including the Dutch Outer Islands ports. The rise of Singapore marked a new era, as such a strong center had not existed before. Through the consumption of British cotton goods, local people around the Dutch Outer Islands ports experienced the shifting politico-economic structure of the Malay-

Indonesian Archipelago. Nevertheless, large parts of the Dutch Outer Islands ports were producing existing types of commodities destined for the China market, in return for British cotton goods.

Traders

In terms of traders, the existing structure largely continued from earlier periods but some modern factors also played an important role. The Bugis were the main players in the early Singapore trade with the Indonesian Archipelago, extending their networks on a scale larger than ever before to Sumbawa, Bali, Lombok, Flores, Timor, New Guinea, and Borneo (Tagliacozzo 2004, 31). After the 1830s, Chinese based in Singapore joined their initiative. Among them, those who obtained Western sailing ships became important players (Wong 1960, 74–84; Reid 1993, 28–29). In other words, newly emerged merchants in Singapore took a leading position, making use of new, if not the newest, technology. However, the Bugis who commanded *pinisi*—traditional sailing ships in the eastern part of the Indonesian Archipelago—continued to play an important role, especially between Surabaya and the eastern part of the archipelago. These Chinese and Bugis traders carried products for the Chinese and Southeast Asian markets to Singapore and major ports in Java, and in return redistributed various imported items, among them British cotton goods, from these ports to various places in the archipelago, as Kobayashi mentions.

Dutch companies also participated in inter-island shipping. The Dutch Trading Company (Nederlandsche Handel-Maatschappij), established in 1824 and strongly supported by the government, opened regular inter-island routes, but its business met fierce competition from cheap Asian shipping businesses. After 1870, the Dutch East Indies Steamboat Company (Nederlandsch-Indië Stoomvaart Maatschappij), founded in 1842, provided cheap rates thanks to government subsidies and gradually controlled the inter-island shipping market. In the 1890s, the Royal Shipping Company (Koninklijke Paketvaart Maatschappij), founded in 1888, established control over inter-island shipping, stabilizing the business with privileges such as a monopoly over the transport of mail and official goods and personnel. However, it is worth noting that in the following depression period, cheaper traditional Bugis shipping recovered and rapidly increased in Makassar after 1916 and in Surabaya after 1926 (Dick 1975, 74–77; Poelinggomang 1993, 66–69; Lindblad 2002, 88–92, 99). These long rivalries would not have developed unless Bugis and other Asian shipping remained dominant in the period under study.

Conclusion

At the beginning of this paper, two views on the relative importance of China-oriented trade in nineteenth-century Southeast Asia were mentioned. Some scholars who claim the importance of this type of trade tend to emphasize the continuity from the previous periods, especially the eighteenth century. Others do not evaluate this type of trade as important, seemingly assuming that the rise of Singapore and the increase in the production of colonial products marked a fundamental transformation in economic structure, especially in the western part of the Indonesian Archipelago.

This paper is a compromise between these two views. Trade statistics on the Dutch Outer Islands ports that have been examined in this paper reveal that these ports continued to export China-bound (partly Southeast Asia-bound) products, such as pepper, forest products, and other kinds of local products. At the same time, the production of coffee in West Sumatra and tin in Belitung developed on the Dutch initiative. In many cases, however, exports grew due to a combination of Chinese and local initiatives and Western impacts. This was typical in the case of marine product collection in Makassar and pepper and gambier cultivation in Riau. In addition, the most common feature was that the Dutch Outer Islands ports—even though they were exporting China-bound products—imported increasing amounts of British cotton goods.

As a result of these developments, a new trade structure emerged in the period under study. It was to bring tropical products out to China and Southeast Asia in the existing manner, and to bring in British cotton goods in a new manner that became noticeable after the Anglo-Dutch tariff arrangement came to be stabilized in the 1840s. In this way the existing China-oriented trade and the new colonial trade, linked to Western capitalism, interacted and combined with each other. The establishment of this combined trade pattern was an important factor for promoting an active trade in the nineteenth century, in addition to well-recognized benefits of Western impacts, such as the development of physical, social, and economic infrastructures—including port facilities and modern legal and financial systems in major ports—and government and private investments.

The data set in this study also reveals that the Dutch Outer Islands ports exported marine and forest products and other kinds of China-bound local products in almost the same volumes as colonial products in the 1850s and 1860s, when exports of the latter grew remarkably (Table 3). Their exports were still smaller than the exports from Java, which consisted mostly of colonial products (Table 1), but the volume of China-bound local products was not insignificant.

Importantly, although the ports examined in this paper substantially lost their traditional direct links with south China, they established strong links with Singapore, while

Makassar reestablished its age-old ties with China, and to a lesser degree with Manila and other Southeast Asian regions. This is how the Dutch Outer Islands ports were as strongly tied with other parts of Southeast Asia as with the Java-centered colonial economy. Going back to the issue of when the Chinese century ended, if we focus only on Chinese trade and migration (and production by Chinese migrants), as previous studies have, the Chinese century seems to have faded away in the mid-eighteenth century. However, if we focus on the structure of China-oriented trade, the production and trade pattern of China-bound products continued well into the late 1860s, in a reorganized network more concentrated in Singapore and to a much lesser degree in Makassar. This transborder network beyond the Dutch sphere of influence was a source of the strength that the regions around these ports maintained, in the form of a steady development of trade. Western capitalism and colonialism provided Bugis, Chinese, and other Asian traders with opportunities for trading British cotton goods for China-bound products. They took advantage of these opportunities and expanded their activities on a scale larger than ever before. As a result of such interactions, trade steadily developed during the period under study.

Accepted: August 19, 2013

References

Andaya, Leonard Y. 1995. The Bugis-Makassar Diasporas. *Journal of the Malaysian Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society* 68(1): 119–138.

Batavia Departement van Financien. 1851–70. *Overzigt van den handel en de scheepvaart in de Nederlandsche bezittingen in Oost Indie, buiten Java en Madura, over de jaren . . .* [Overview of trade and shipping in the Dutch possessions in the East Indies, apart from Java and Madura, for the years . . .]. Batavia: Landsdrukkerij.

Blussé, Leonard. 1999. The Chinese Century: The Eighteenth Century in the China Sea Region. *Archipel* 58: 107–129.

Bulbeck, David; Reid, Anthony; Tan, Lay Cheng; and Wu, Yiqu, eds. 1998. *Southeast Asian Exports since the 14th Century: Cloves, Pepper, Coffee, and Sugar*. Singapore: Institute of Southeast Asian Studies.

Cowan, C. D., ed. 1950. Early Penang and the Rise of Singapore. *Journal of the Malayan Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society* 23(2): 1–211.

Crawfurd, John. 1820. *History of the Indian Archipelago: Containing an Account of the Manners, Arts, Languages, Religions, Institutions, and Commerce of Its Inhabitants*, 3 vols. Edinburgh: Constable; London: Hurs, Robinson and Co.

Cushman, Jennifer. [1993] 2000. *Fields from the Sea: Chinese Junk Trade with Siam during the Late Eighteenth and Early Nineteenth Centuries*. Ithaca: Cornell University Press.

Dick, H. W. 1975. Prahu Shipping in Eastern Indonesia, Part I. *Bulletin of Indonesian Economic Studies* 11(2): 69–107.

Dick, Howard W. 1993. Indonesian Economic History Inside Out. *Review of Indonesian and Malaysian*

Affairs 27: 1–12.

————. 1990. Interisland Trade, Economic Integration, and the Emergence of National Economy. In *Indonesian Economic History in the Dutch Colonial Era*, edited by Anne Booth, W. J. O'Malley, and Anna Weidemann, pp. 296–321. New Haven: Yale University Southeast Asia Studies.

Dobbin, Christine. 1983. *Islamic Revivalism in a Changing Peasant Economy: Central Sumatra 1784–1847*. London: Curzon Press.

Elson, Robert E. [1992] 1999. International Commerce, the State and Society: Economic and Social Change. In *The Cambridge History of Southeast Asia*, Vol. 2, Part 1: *From c.1800 to the 1930s*, edited by Nicholas Tarling, pp. 127–191. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Knapen, Han. 2001. *Forests of Fortune? The Environmental History of Southeast Borneo, 1600–1880*. Leiden: KITLV Press.

Korthals Altes, W. L. 1991. *Changing Economy in Indonesia: A Selection of Statistical Source Material from the Early 19th Century up to 1940*, Vol. 12 A: *General Trade Statistics 1822–1940*. Amsterdam: Royal Tropical Institute.

Lee, James. 1982. The Legacy of Immigration in Southwest China, 1250–1850. *Annales de demographie historique* [Annual reports of demographic history]: 279–304.

Lewis, Dianne. 1970. The Growth of the Country Trade to the Straits of Malacca, 1760–1777. *Journal of the Malaysian Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society* 43(2): 114–129.

Lindblad, J. Thomas. 2002. The Outer Islands in the 19th Century: Contest for the Periphery. In *The Emergence of a National Economy: An Economic History of Indonesia, 1800–2000*, edited by Howard Dick, Vincent J. H. Houben, J. Thomas, and Thee Kian Wie, pp. 82–110. St Leonards: Allen & Unwin; Leiden: KITLV Press.

————. 1989. Between Singapore and Batavia: The Outer Islands in the Southeast Asian Economy during the Nineteenth Century. In *Kapitaal, ondernemerschap en beleid: Studies over economie en politiek in Nederland, Europa en Asië van 1500 tot heden* [Capital, enterprise, and policy: Studies on economy and politics in the Netherlands, Europe, and Asia from 1500 to present], edited by C. A. Davis, W. Fritschey, and L. A. van der Valk, pp. 529–548. Amsterdam: NEHA.

McNeill, John R. 1994. Of Rats and Men: A Synoptic Environmental History of the Island Pacific. *Journal of World History* 5(2): 299–349.

Milburn, William. [1813] 1999. *Oriental Commerce: Containing a Geographical Description of the Principal Places in the East Indies, China and Japan, with Their Produce, Manufactures and Trade, Including the Coasting or Country Trade from Port to Port* [. . .]. New Delhi: Munshiram Manoharlal.

Ota, Atsushi. 2006. *Changes of Regime and Social Dynamics in West Java: Society, State, and the Outer World of Banten, 1750–1830*. Leiden and Boston: Brill.

Poelinggomang, Edward L. 1993. The Dutch Trade Policy and Its Impact on Makassar's Trade. *Review of Indonesian and Malaysian Affairs* 27(1 and 2): 61–76.

Pomeranz, Kenneth. 2000. *The Great Divergence: China, Europe, and the Making of the Modern World Economy*. Princeton: Princeton University Press.

Pritchard, Earl H. 1936. *The Crucial Years of Early Anglo-Chinese Relations, 1750–1800*, Vol. 4, No. 3–4. Washington: Research Studies of the State College of Washington.

Reid, Anthony. 2011. Chinese on the Mining Frontier in Southeast Asia. In *Chinese Circulations: Capital, Commodities, and Networks in Southeast Asia*, edited by Eric Tagliacozzo and Wen-chin Chang, pp. 21–36. Durham: Duke University Press.

————. 2004. Chinese Trade and Southeast Asian Economic Expansion in the Later Eighteenth and Early Nineteenth Centuries: An Overview. In *Water Frontier: Commerce and the Chinese in the Lower Mekong Region, 1750–1880*, edited by Nola Cook and Li Tana, pp. 21–34. Singapore: NUS Press; London: Rowman & Littlefield.

———. 1997a. Introduction. In *The Last Stand of Asian Autonomies: Responses to Modernity in the Diverse States of Southeast Asia and Korea, 1750–1900*, edited by Anthony Reid, pp. 1–21. Basingstoke and London: Macmillan Press.

———. 1997b. A New Phase of Commercial Expansion in Southeast Asia, 1760–1850. In *The Last Stand of Asian Autonomies: Responses to Modernity in the Diverse States of Southeast Asia and Korea, 1750–1900*, edited by Anthony Reid, pp. 57–81. Basingstoke and London: Macmillan Press.

———. 1993. The Unthreatening Alternative: Chinese Shipping in Southeast Asia 1675–1842. *Review of Indonesian and Malaysian Affairs* 27: 13–32.

Rowe, William, T. 1998. Domestic Interregional Trade in China. In *On the Eighteenth Century as a Category of Asian History: Van Leur in Retrospect*, edited by Leonard Blussé and Femme Gaastra, pp. 173–192. Aldershot, etc.: Ashgate.

———. 1984. The Trade of Hankow. *Hankow: Commerce and Society in a Chinese City, 1796–1889*, pp. 52–89. Stanford: Stanford University Press.

Somers Heidhues, Mary F. 2003. *Golddiggers, Farmers, and Traders in the "Chinese Districts" of West Kalimantan, Indonesia*. Ithaca: Southeast Asia Program Publications, Cornell University.

Sutherland, Heather. 2011. A Sino-Indonesian Commodity Chain: The Trade in Tortoiseshell in the Late Seventeenth and Eighteenth Centuries. In *Chinese Circulations: Capital, Commodities, and Networks in Southeast Asia*, edited by Eric Tagliacozzo and Wen-chin Chang, pp. 172–201. Durham: Duke University Press.

———. 2000. Trepang and Wangkang: The China Trade of Eighteenth-Century Makassar, c.1720–1840s. In "Authority and Enterprise among the Peoples of South Sulawesi," edited by Roger Tol, Kees van Dijk, and Greg Acciaioli. Special Issue, *BKI* 156(3): 451–472.

Tagliacozzo, Eric. 2011. A Sino-Southeast Asian Circuit: Ethnohistories of the Marine Goods Trade. In *Chinese Circulations: Capital, Commodities, and Networks in Southeast Asia*, edited by Eric Tagliacozzo and Wen-chin Chang, pp. 432–454. Durham: Duke University Press.

———. 2004. A Necklace of Fins: Marine Goods Trading in Maritime Southeast Asia, 1780–1860. *International Journal of Asian Studies* 1(1): 23–48.

Tagliacozzo, Eric; and Chang, Wen-chin. 2011. *Chinese Circulations: Capital, Commodities, and Networks in Southeast Asia*. Durham: Duke University Press.

Trocki, Carl A. 2011. Opium as a Commodity in the Chinese Nanyang Trade. In *Chinese Circulations: Capital, Commodities, and Networks in Southeast Asia*, edited by Eric Tagliacozzo and Wen-chin Chang, pp. 84–105. Durham: Duke University Press.

———. 1997. Chinese Pioneering in Eighteenth-Century Southeast Asia. In *The Last Stand of Asian Autonomies: Responses to Modernity in the Diverse States of Southeast Asia and Korea, 1750–1900*, edited by Anthony Reid, pp. 83–101. Basingstoke and London: Macmillan Press.

———. 1979. *Prince of Pirates: The Temenggongs and the Development of Johor and Singapore 1784–1885*. Singapore: Singapore University Press.

Turnbull, C. M. 2009. *A History of Modern Singapore 1819–2005*. Singapore: NUS Press.

Viraphol, Sarasin. 1977. *Tribute and Profit: Sino-Siamese Trade, 1652–1853.* Cambridge and London: Harvard University Press.

Vos, Reinout. 1993. *Gentle Janus, Merchant Prince: The VOC and the Tightrope of Diplomacy in the Malay World, 1740–1800*. Leiden: KITLV Press.

Wang, Gungwu; and Ng, Chin-Keong, eds. 2004. *Maritime China in Transition, 1750–1850*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz Verlag.

Warren, James Francis. 1981. *The Sulu Zone, 1768–1898: The Dynamics of External Trade, Slavery, and Ethnicity in the Transformation of a Southeast Asian Maritime State*. Singapore: Singapore University Press.

Wong, Lin Ken. 1960. The Trade of Singapore, 1819–1869. *Journal of the Malayan Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society* 33(4): 1–315.

Yamashita Shinji 山下晋司. 1988. *Girei no Seijigaku: Indoneshia Toraja no Dotaiteki Minzokushi* 儀礼の政治学――インドネシア・トラジャの動態的民族誌 [Politics of rituals: Dynamism ethnography of Toraja, Indonesia]. Tokyo: Kobundo.

Tracing Hồ Chí Minh's Sojourn in Siam

Thanyathip Sripana*

Hồ Chí Minh, the Vietnamese revolutionary leader who sacrificed his life for his country's independence, was in Siam from 1928–29 and briefly from March–April 1930. Siam was well placed to serve as an anti-colonial base for the Vietnamese fighting for independence in the west of central Vietnam, especially after the repression of the Chinese communists in Guangdong by Chiang Kai Shek in 1927. Northern Siam is connected to central Vietnam by land via Laos, while southern China is also accessible from Bangkok by sea routes.

Hồ Chí Minh arrived in Bangkok in 1928. He went to Ban Dong in Phichit and then to Udon Thani, Nong Khai, Sakon Nakhon, and Nakhon Phanom in the northeast of Siam. The paper studies when and how Hồ Chí Minh arrived in Siam; his mission there; the places he visited; and his activities during his sojourn. We also enquire how Hồ Chí Minh carried out his mission: who accompanied him in Siam; what pseudonyms he and his collaborators used; and what strategies he used to elude arrest by local authorities.

It cannot be denied that the instruction Hồ Chí Minh imparted to his compatriots during his stay contributed tremendously to the struggle for Vietnamese independence. By the end of the 1920s and the beginning of the 1930s, he had accomplished his task of reorganizing and strengthening the network, and educating the Vietnamese anti-colonial and revolutionary movement in Siam. In addition, he contributed to the founding of the communist party in the region, which was the task assigned to him by the Comintern.

Nonetheless, we should recognize that his mission in Siam was facilitated and supported by Đặng Thúc Hứa, who, prior to Hồ's arrival, had gathered the Vietnamese into communities and set up several bases for long-term anti-colonial movements with the help of his compatriots.

Hồ Chí Minh's presence in Siam has been commemorated by the Thai and Vietnamese through the Thai-Vietnamese Friendship Village and the memorial houses built after 2000 in Nakhon Phanom and Udon Thani in northeastern Thailand. These memorials have become a symbol of the good relationship between Thailand and Vietnam.

Keywords: Hồ Chí Minh in Siam, Hồ Chí Minh's sojourn in Siam, Hồ Chí Minh in Nakhon Phanom, Hồ Chí Minh's pseudonym in Siam, Đặng Thúc Hứa, Đặng Quỳnh Anh, Việt Kiều in Thailand, Hồ Chí Minh's memorial houses in Thailand, Vietnamese anti-colonial movement in Siam

* ธัญญาทิพย์ ศรีพนา, Institute of Asian Studies, Chulalongkorn University, Phyathai Road, Pathumwan, Bangkok 10800, Thailand
e-mail: sthanyat@hotmail.com

Hồ Chí Minh[1] was a Vietnamese revolutionary leader who sacrificed his life for Vietnam's independence. He left Vietnam for the first time in 1911 on a French steamer *Amiral Latouche-Tréville* in order to canvas support for the fight. He visited and stayed in many countries before arriving in Siam. Hồ Chí Minh was in Siam from 1928–29 and briefly in March and April 1930. Hồ Chí Minh did not just stay in Siam but also crossed the Mekong river to briefly meet the Vietnamese in Laos in order to learn about the resistance against the French and assist in the setting up of the Vietnamese Revolutionary Youth League in Laos.

As Hồ Chí Minh's mission in Siam was confidential, there is very little information regarding his activities. However, multiple sources exist that shed light on his sojourn. These include the memoirs of his revolutionary compatriots who worked closely with him during his mission; interviews given by people whose family member worked or travelled with him or who lived in the same house in Siam; discussions with the Vietnamese scholars at the Museum of Hồ Chí Minh in Hanoi; documentary films produced by the museum; as well as discussions with elderly Vietnamese who used to live in Thailand[2] and with Việt Kiều[3] who are still living in Thailand.

The memoirs, considered primary sources, contain much precious informative and have been used by many writers, Vietnamese and foreigners. They include *Giọt Nước trong Biển Cả* (*Hồi Ký Cách Mạng*) [A drop in the Ocean: Hoàng Văn Hoan's revolutionary reminiscences] by Hoàng Văn Hoan; *Cuộc Vận Động Cứu Quốc Của Việt kiều ở Thái Lan* [The patriotic mobilization of the overseas Vietnamese in Thailand] by Lê Mạnh Trinh, etc. These two memoirs may be slightly contradictory on the dates of some events as they were written years after the end of the 1920s, but this is easily clarified by cross-checking various documents. Some other Vietnamese books that made use of these memoirs also reproduced minor mistakes regarding the name of places in Thailand. Another notable source is *Con Người và Con Đường* [People and pathways] by Sơn Tùng, based on his interview of the revolutionary Đặng Quỳnh Anh, who resided and participated in the anti-colonial and revolutionary movement in Siam or Thailand from 1913–53. The book provides invaluable details about the

1) Hồ Chí Minh (May 19, 1890–September 2, 1969), was named Nguyễn Sinh Cung by his family, then Nguyễn Tất Thành. Later he was known as Nguyễn Ái Quốc. He was Prime Minister (1945–55) and President (1945–69) of the Democratic Republic of Vietnam (North Vietnam). He was a key figure in the formation of the Democratic Republic of Vietnam in 1945, as well as the People's Army of Vietnam (PAVN) and the Việt Cộng during the Vietnam War until his death in 1969. He led the Việt Minh independence movement from 1941 onward.

2) These people were repatriated from Thailand to Vietnam between 1960 and 1964 under the Agreement between the Thai Red Cross Society and the Red Cross Society of Democratic Republic of Vietnam concerning the Repatriation of Vietnamese in Thailand to the Democratic Republic of Vietnam. See Chan (1960); see also Thanyathip and Trịnh (2005).

3) Việt Kiều means "Overseas Vietnamese." Việt Kiều Hồi Hương means "Overseas Vietnamese who returned to their homeland."

role of the Vietnamese émigrés in the salvation of their homeland from the French, as well as Hồ Chí Minh's activities at Ban Dong (บ้านดง), in Phichit (พิจิตร). As Hồ Chí Minh stayed in her house in Ban Dong for a while before leaving for Udon Thani (อุดรธานี), briefly called Udon (อุดรฯ), and Võ Tùng, her husband worked closely with Hồ Chí Minh, she came to know about Hồ Chí Minh's whereabouts and activities while he was in Ban Dong and when he left Ban Dong for Udon. She did not know his true identity at that time but was very suspicious about his activities.

Hồ Chí Minh Toàn Tập, an official 12-volume set of documents of the Vietnamese Communist Party is another useful document. It compiles information from various sources, including Hồ Chí Minh's reports submitted to the Comintern (the Communist International) and translated into Vietnamese. It includes his report dated February 18, 1930, containing information on Siam and the period when he arrived in Siam for the first time.

Books by foreign scholars have also been very informative and useful. They are, among others: *Thailand and the Southeast Asian Networks of the Vietnamese Revolution (1885–1954)* by Christopher E. Goscha; *Ho Chi Minh: A Life* by William J. Duiker; *Ho Chi Minh: Du révolutionnaire à l'icône* by Pierre Brocheux; *Ho Chi Minh notre camarade: Souvenirs de militants Français* edited by Léo Figuères; and *Ho Chi Minh: The Missing Years* by Sophie Quinn-Judge. However, most of these authors, apart from Goscha and Sophie Quinn-Judge, provided little detail about Hồ Chí Minh's whereabouts and activities in Siam, with whom he resided, and his companions when moving from one place to another place.

Besides documentary research, I had the opportunity to visit the places where Hồ Chí Minh resided or where Vietnamese patriots conducted their activities such as: Ban Nong On (บ้านหนองโอน) in Udon; Ban May (บ้านใหม่) or Ban Na Chok (บ้านนาจอก) in Muang district in Nakhon Phanom (นครพนม); as well as That Phanom (ธาตุพนม) and Tha Uthen (ท่าอุเทน) districts in Nakhon Phanom. I was also able to meet and discuss with some elderly Việt Kiều. Likewise, in Vietnam, I met Sơn Tùng, who had interviewed Đặng Quỳnh Anh, and Trần Đình Lưu, a Việt Kiều Hồi Hương from Nakhon Phanom who had direct contact with the families of the revolutionaries and who had written a book entitled *Việt Kiều Lào-Thái với Quê Hương* [Lao-Thai overseas Vietnamese and their homeland]. He was also involved in revolutionary activities in the 1970s and 1980s. Back in Thailand, I also met and shared information with the Việt Kiều interested in the subject of Hồ Chí Minh in Siam. These meetings allowed me to crosscheck information. Nonetheless, the number of elderly people I could interview was limited, and the number diminishes with each passing year.[4)]

4) For example, Sơn Tùng's health condition has been fragile for some years now. On November 8, 2011, I paid Trần Đình Lưu or Trần Đình Riên (whom I call Chú Riên, meaning Uncle Riên) a visit. I waited for ages in front of his house but found out later that he had passed away in August 2011. As a former ↗

This article is an overview of Hồ Chí Minh's sojourn in Siam. I have tried to compile scattered information from various sources and crosscheck as much as possible. There are, however, limits to the article. For now, I have focused on Hồ Chí Minh's sojourn in Siam without considering the wider context of his activities in other countries. Secondly, I could not use information in Russian and, more importantly, Chinese, which would have shed more light on Hồ Chí Minh's activities in Siam. I was also unable to access the Centre des Archives d'Outre-Mer (CAOM) in Aix-en-Provence, France, where valuable material, including that left by French security agents, is stored. Finally, while I have tried to draw upon previous studies on Hồ Chí Minh in Siam as much as possible, there are still a number of works I have yet to explore. It is expected that further research will make this study more complete.

In my paper, I explore the reasons for which Siam served as an anti-colonial base by the Vietnamese. Why was Hồ Chí Minh in Siam? By what means did he arrive in this country and where from? Where did he stay and what were his activities? Who worked with him and what pseudonyms did Hồ Chí Minh use during his mission in Siam?

The Migration of the Vietnamese to Siam

The migration of Vietnamese to Thailand (or Siam before 1939)[5] took place over many periods: the Ayutthaya period in the mid-seventeenth century, the early Rattanakosin period during the reigns of King Rama I and II in the late eighteenth–early nineteenth centuries, the reign of King Rama IV in the mid-nineteenth century, the reign of King Rama V from the late nineteenth–early twentieth centuries, and the period during and after World War II.

Migration to Siam was motivated by various factors: religious persecution by the Nguyễn Court, French suppression, as well as hardship and suffering from poverty. During the reign of King Rama III, the Vietnamese were also forcibly moved from Cambodia as prisoners-of-war following the war between Vietnam and Siam on Cambodia in 1833–47.

↘ member of the Bureau of External Relations which was under the Central Committee of the Vietnamese Communist Party, and as a Việt Kiều who returned from Nakhon Phanom and lived for a long time in Vietnam, Uncle Riên was very informative and had many contacts with the Việt Kiều Hồi Hương in Vietnam. He had worked at the Embassy of Vietnam in Bangkok for at least four years. Perfectly fluent in the Thai language, he served as translator for Vietnamese Prime Minister Phạm Văn Đồng and Thai Prime Minister Kriengsak Chamanand during the former's visit to Bangkok in 1978. I am tremendously grateful to him for his contribution to my research over a period of 10 years. He was an invaluable fount of information for whom I have the greatest respect. Hoàng Nhật Tân, Hoàng Văn Hoan's son, has also been very helpful regarding his father's and Hồ Chí Minh's activities in Siam. He has been inactive due to his weak health condition and as of November 2011 is staying in a medical care center for the elderly in Hanoi.

5) The name of the country was changed from Siam to Thailand in 1939.

From the late nineteenth to mid-twentieth century, Vietnamese nationalists moved to present-day northeastern Thailand and used it as a base for their resistance to the French in Laos and Vietnam. During the Japanese Occupation at the time of World War II, famine and poverty also forced a number of Vietnamese to leave their country.

During the reign of King Rama I in the early Rattanakosin period, Siam was a refuge for Nguyễn Phúc Ánh or Nguyễn Ánh, a nephew of the last Nguyễn lord who ruled over southern Vietnam during the 1780s (Chao Phraya Thipakornwongse 1983, 29–30). Nguyễn Phúc Ánh or Nguyễn Ánh, later called Gia Long, fled from the Tây Sơn brothers to Siam with 1,000 followers in the 1780s. He was sheltered in Bangkok by King Rama I, who also provided him with troops and arms, enabling him to rebuild part of his forces to fight against the Tây Sơn. In return, he lent his forces to the Siamese army fighting against Burma in Dawei (ทวาย) and the Melayu rebellion in the Gulf of Siam (Thanyathip and Trịnh 2005, 16).

Nguyễn Phúc Ánh and his followers were allowed by Rama I to stay at Ban Ton Samrong (บ้านต้นสำโรง) Tambon Khok Krabuu (ตำบลคอกกระบือ) (Chao Phraya Thipakornwongse 1983, 29). Later they were moved to Samsen (สามเสน) and Bangpho (บางโพ) in Bangkok. Samsen, called Ban Yuan Samsen (บ้านญวนสามเสน), is well known as a Vietnamese village. Another area where a number of the Vietnamese used to live is Bangpho, where Wat Annamnikayaram (วัดอนัมนิกายาราม) is presently located.[6] These two places were 3–3.5 km apart and located in Bangkok on the left side of the Chao Phraya river. While in Bangkok, he was sometimes joined by his partisans from Vietnam. He left Siam after spending no less than four years there. He continued to receive help from Rama I who sent him ammunition and ships (*ibid.*, 98–99, 106–108). With the help of the French, the Portuguese, Chinese merchants, and King Rama I, Nguyễn Phúc Ánh defeated the Tây Sơn in present-day southern Vietnam in 1802, unified the country, and proclaimed himself Emperor Gia Long. This is one of the instances when Siam served as a refuge and base of resistance by Vietnamese exiles who had fled the country because of internal politics.

Phan Đình Phùng and Phan Bội Châu were part of the first generation of Vietnamese anti-colonialists from the turn of the twentieth century. They spent time in Siam to canvas support for their anti-colonial movement. Phan Đình Phùng (1847–96) was the leader of the patriotic and anti-colonial Cần Vương movement in the 1880s and 1890s. For him, the Siamese were useful as a supplier of arms (Lê Mạnh Trinh 1961, 9). Since it was also opposed to French expansion from central Vietnam to northeastern Siam, the Siamese army provided arms to Cần Vương in the late 1880s (Goscha 1999, 25). Phan Bội Châu was a patriotic who founded the Đông Du movement in 1905. He admired Japan's growing military and economic potential and brought some Vietnamese students with him to Japan. But

6) Wat Annamnikaya is located not far from the Bangpho intersection.

in 1909, they were forced to leave as Japan's good relationship with the French took precedence over Châu's call for Asian unity against Western colonization. With the help of a prince and officials from the Ministry of Foreign Affairs of Siam, Phan Bội Châu, who visited Siam at least three times between 1908 and 1911, was allowed to transfer his students, who had been deported from Japan, to Siam. These students were allowed to reside at and use the land at Ban Tham (บ้านถ้ำ) in Paknampho (ปากน้ำโพ),[7] taken care of by Đặng Thúc Hứa. At the same time, Phan Bội Châu also asked the Siamese government to allow him to transfer weapons from Hong Kong to Vietnam by way of Siam (*ibid.*, 31). His request was not granted as the Siamese government feared disrupting the Franco-Siamese relationship.

The loss of territories on the left and right sides of the Mekong river as a result of the French-Siamese treaties signed in 1893 and 1904, coupled with the fact that the Siamese court was forced to renounce its claims on Cambodian territory following the treaties signed in 1907, led to increasing Siamese hostility, distrust and fear vis-à-vis the French. This forged a unity between the Siamese court and the Vietnamese; the Siamese hoped that the Vietnamese anti-colonialists would be a force against French colonization. The Siam authorities resisted pressure from the French authorities to arrest and hand over the Vietnamese to the French, but they were sometimes obliged to take action and close the Vietnamese communities, for example, Ban Tham in 1914 and Ban Dong in 1917, or when the revolutionary bases in Ban Dong were destroyed in 1930.

After the meeting in Hong Kong that saw the Vietnamese communist groups unify to form one party at the end of 1929 and the start of 1930, and after the Xô Việt Nghệ Tĩnh revolts in Vietnam from April 1930 to the summer of 1931, the Siamese authorities, pressurized by the French, became stricter with the Vietnamese than during Hồ Chí Minh's stay. Some Vietnamese were arrested in Bangkok after Hồ's voyage to Hong Kong, for example, Võ Tùng and Đặng Thái Thuyến on June 4, 1930 (*ibid.*, 11). Siam served once again as a refuge and as a base for Vietnamese resistance against the French. Đặng Thúc Hứa, one of the Vietnamese exiles who joined Phan Bội Châu in Japan in 1908, was in Siam with the latter in 1909 and later on set up bases in this land.

Siam as a Vietnamese Anti-colonial Base

Geographically, Siam was well placed to serve as a base for anti-colonial operations in the west of central Vietnam. Siam can be connected to Vietnam by land and sea routes. Most of the Vietnamese arrived in Siam by land via Laos then crossed the Mekong river to north-

7) Paknampho (ปากน้ำโพ) is presently in Nakhon Sawan (นครสวรรค์).

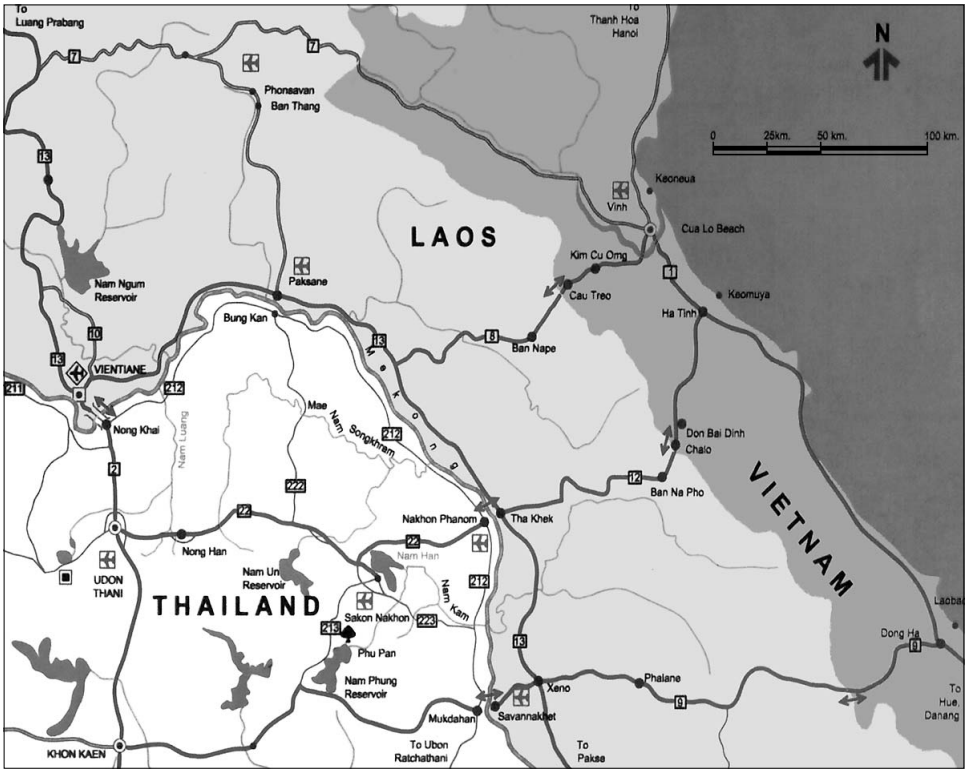
eastern Siam, present-day Isan (อีสาน). The distance is approximately 310 km from Vinh in Nghệ An province of Vietnam to Nakhon Phanom in northeastern Siam if travelers took the road currently called Road No. 8. But from the Vietnam-Laos border in Hà Tĩnh province to Tha Khek town (เมืองท่าแขก) in Khammuon province (แขวงคำม่วน) by Road No. 12, and then Nakhon Phanom, the distance is only approximately 145 km.

According to Đặng Quỳnh Anh in *Con Người và Con Đường*[8] (Sơn Tùng 1993, 54), she took two months to travel by foot from Kim Liên village, Thanh Chương district in Nghệ An province to Ban Pak Hinboun in Khammuon province of Laos. Ban Pak Hinboun is located 3 km from the Mekong bank and opposite to Tha Uthen district in Nakhon Phanom. However, those in good physical condition may take less than two months. The route passes through jungle full of wild animals and diseases. It was believed that Đặng Quỳnh Anh and most of the Vietnamese leaving from Nghệ An and Hà Tĩnh would have travelled on the Road No. 8, or a part of the road, one that passed through the high mountain range called Trường Sơn, separating Vietnam and Laos. This mountain range and the Động Trìm and Động Trẹo caves were mentioned in her interview in *Con Người và Con Đường* (*ibid.*, 10). Road No. 12 is another route connecting Hà Tĩnh to Tha Khek and Nakhon Phanom. Central Vietnam, starting from Quảng Trị, is also connected to northeastern Siam by Road No. 9, which was built by the French in the beginning of 1920s.[9]

The Vietnamese scattered in Siam represented a good source of recruitment for the

8) Đặng Quỳnh Anh, also known as Bà Nho or Bà O, was Đặng Thúc Hứa's cousin. She is not Đặng Thúc Hứa's daughter as mentioned in some books. She arrived in Siam in 1913 to help Hứa form a base and take care of children in Ban Tham, Paknampho in Nakhon Sawan (Sơn Tùng 1993). I had the opportunity to talk to Đặng Quỳnh Anh's niece, Đặng Thanh Lê, in November 2011 and July 2012 at her house in Hanoi. She confirmed that Đặng Quỳnh Anh was Đặng Thúc Hứa's cousin. A brave woman, she sacrificed her life for the salvation of her homeland for 40 years in Siam. She took care of the youth who arrived from Vietnam and taught Vietnamese children in Ban Tham, Nakhon Sawan and Ban Dong, Phichit. *Con Người và Con Đường* describes her life very well—the activities she conducted and the difficulties she faced in Siam. She was sentenced to 20 years of imprisonment on communist charges (according to the 1933 Act Concerning Communism). She was imprisoned for 10 years in Thailand. Upon her release, she was invited by the Communist Party of Vietnam to return home in 1953. She spent the rest of her life until 1976 or 1977 in Vietnam. She is survived by three children. Đặng Quỳnh Anh was admitted as a member of the Communist Party of Indochina when she was in Khon Kaen in April 1934. She became a member of Duy Tân Hội in 1908, as well as of Quang Phục Hội. In 1926, she joined the Vietnamese Revolutionary Youth League (Việt Nam Thanh Niên Cách Mạng Đồng Chí Hội) at its Ban Dong branch (*ibid.*, 188; interviews with her first son, Võ Thung, between 2002 and 2011).

9) Road No. 9 was used by most of the Vietnamese, including patriots who fled the French after the Nghệ-Tĩnh incident in the beginning of the 1930s. Road No. 9 connects Đông Hà town in Quảng Trị in central Vietnam to Kaison Phomvihan town in Savannakhet, and then to Mukdahan in northeastern Siam or Thailand. The distance from Đông Hà town to the Lao Bảo border gate at the Vietnam–Laos border is 84 km, while the distance from this border to Kaison Phomvihan town in Sawannakhet province is 240 km.



Map 1 Road No.s 8, 9 and 12 Presently Connecting Northeastern Thailand and Vietnam
Source: Former Thai Ambassador to Hanoi, Krit Kraichitti.

anti-colonial movement. They had been driven out by poverty and exploitation, and hated the French. This is one of the reasons why Đặng Thúc Hứa focused on setting up bases in Siam.[10] Using Siamese territory as an anti-colonial base was safer than using Laos and Vietnam. Although the Siamese government was sometimes under French pressure to stop

10) Đặng Thúc Hứa was born in 1870 in Lương Điền village, Thanh Chương district, Nghệ An province. He realized that in order to fight against the French, the Vietnamese should rely on themselves, not on other countries, and that Siam was a good place to develop Vietnamese revolutionary bases. He went to the places in Siam where the Vietnamese resided and gathered them into a community. With his friends, he established bases for long-term patriotic movements. The first community was in Ban Tham, Paknampho, which was used as the center of the movement in the beginning of 1910s. There, they built farms and trained youths. He realized that the revolution was a long-term struggle and that it was necessary to create a future generation of comrades and nationalists. As he was concerned about illiteracy among the Việt Kiều children, he and others built schools, mobilized Việt Kiều to send their children to school, and also welcomed children from Vietnam. Đặng Thúc Hứa and his compatriots organized classes for children in language, morality, and patriotic consciousness.

the Vietnamese activities, Siam was not a French colony or protectorate. Consequently, French intelligence agents could not operate freely in Siam. Moreover, Siam had sympathy for the Vietnamese fighting French colonization as it was also encountering the same thing at that time. Siamese authorities did not pay much attention to what the Vietnamese were doing. In the beginning of the 1910s, a Siamese prince even arranged for Phan Bội Châu and his followers to stay in a village in Ban Tham in Paknampho, Nakhon Sawan (Goscha 1999, 33).[11] Paknampho, which is approximately 240 km away from Bangkok, was the first community set up by Đặng Thúc Hứa. It remains a very fertile area even today. Siam served as the liaison point between China, Hong Kong and Vietnam.

Hồ Chí Minh's Choice of Siam

When the French Communist Party did not step in to help save his country from French colonization, Hồ Chí Minh realized that the Vietnamese should rely on themselves and that he should conduct his mission in Asia, not in Europe or the Soviet Union. He thus left for Guangdong in 1924. However, three years later, Chiang Kai Shek started cracking down on the Chinese communists. This was a severe setback for the Vietnam Revolutionary Youth League (Việt Nam Thanh Niên Cách Mạng Đồng Chí Hội), which had been established in 1925. It became difficult for them to operate and their headquarters had to be moved from Guangdong to Hong Kong (Figuères 1970, 43). Consequently, there was a need to set up a new base. When it became impossible to operate in Guangdong, Hồ Chí Minh or Lý Thụy[12] had two choices: remain in China and risk being arrested, or leave for Siam to restore contact with the Vietnamese movement there, as well as to strengthen the movement in Indochina, especially Laos. He decided on Siam.

Hồ Chí Minh was advised by Jacques Doriot, a member of the French Communist Party, to return to Europe before proceeding to Siam. He agreed and proposed to the Comintern (the Communist International) that he should go to Siam where he would be able to work closely with the Overseas Chinese Communists in Bangkok. Moreover, he would be able to mobilize the Vietnamese and strengthen the anti-colonial movement in Siam, especially the training of the young members.

He thus left Guangdong for Hong Kong by train on May 5, 1927 (Duiker 2000, 145), then on to Shanghai and Vladivostok, which was the headquarters for the Soviet revolution-

11) The delta in Paknampho is formed by four rivers: Ping (ปิง), Wang (วัง), Yom (ยม), and Nan (น่าน). These four rivers combine to form the Chao Phraya river (แม่น้ำเจ้าพระยา). Paknampho is connected to Bangkok by river and land routes.

12) Lý Thụy was his name when he was in Guangdong.

ary operation in the Far East. From Vladivostok, he arrived in Moscow in early June 1927 (Brocheux 2003, 74–75; Duiker 2000, 88), where he sent a travel request to the Far Eastern Bureau (Duiker 2000, 88), proposing to go to Siam rather than return to Shanghai, as was suggested by the Comintern agent Grigory Voitinsky. The Comintern wanted Hồ Chí Minh to work in southern China because he had a very good relationship with the Chinese Communist Party.

In November 1927, Hồ Chí Minh received word from the Comintern. Instead of Siam, he was instructed to work with the French Communist Party in Paris. He thus left for Paris, stopping briefly in Berlin in early December 1927 to help a German friend set up a branch of the new Anti-Imperialist League. The French tried to locate him when he arrived in Paris so he left for Brussels to attend a meeting of the executive council of the Anti-Imperialist League, where he met the Indian nationalist Motilal Nehru, the Indonesian nationalist Sukarno, and Song Qingling, Sun Yat Sen's widow (*ibid.*, 48–49). In mid-December, he returned briefly to France, then left for Berlin by train. He stayed in Berlin for several months.

He realized that although the French Communist Party paid attention to colonial problems, there was no concrete action. After travelling without purpose from country to country and waiting impatiently for approval for his journey to Siam, he wrote to the Far Eastern Bureau again from Berlin in April 1928 (*ibid.*, 149–150). Within the same month, he finally received a reply from Moscow, giving him permission and funds to travel to Indochina, and three months' rent for a room (*ibid.*, 150). The Comintern's decision was conveyed by V. P. Kolarov, a Bulgarian economist and communist leader and member of the Comintern presidium until its dissolution in 1943 (Brocheux 2003, 77). The Comintern gave permission to Hồ Chí Minh to set up a revolutionary movement in Siam (Goscha 1999, 76). His mission was to strengthen the revolutionary movement in Indochina against French colonization, using Siam as a base.

By the end of the 1920s, a number of the Vietnamese in Siam were already mobilized and trained, thanks to Đặng Thúc Hứa and his compatriots who had arrived in Siam earlier. Siam had already become an anti-colonial base in the west of Vietnam before Hồ Chí Minh arrived in 1928. After the repression by Chiang Kai Shek in 1927, more Vietnamese moved to Siam from southern China. Furthermore, the Xô Viết Nghệ Tĩnh movement, which faced difficulties in 1930–31, pushed more Vietnamese to northeastern Siam.

Hồ Chí Minh's Voyage to Siam

In early June 1928, Hồ Chí Minh left Berlin and travelled by train from Switzerland to Italy, passing through Milan and Rome. He arrived in Naples where he embarked on a Japanese

ship for Siam at the end of June (Duiker 2000, 150; Brocheux 2003, 77–78; Bảo Tàng Hồ Chí Minh 2011, 112). Goscha mentioned that according to the French Sûreté report written in January 1931, Hồ Chí Minh left Russia before the Comintern Congress of July 1928 and travelled clandestinely to Siam by way of Berlin. The ship passed by the Suez canal, Port Saïd, the Red Sea, Colombo (Sri Lanka), Singapore, and Bangkok (Sukpreeda 2006, 54).

When he arrived in Singapore, he was received by the Nanyang Organization. He had to embark on a smaller ship named *Gola* to continue his journey to Siam because of the sand bar at the mouth of Chao Praya river (*ibid.*, 54). Sukpreeda mentioned that Hồ Chí Minh disembarked at BI port near Bangkok[13] as an overseas Chinese trader under the name "Mr. Lai" (*ibid.*, 54–55) or Nguyễn Lai (Trần Dương 2009, 42; Bảo Tàng Hồ Chí Minh 2011, 39). He spoke fluent Cantonese.

Hồ Chí Minh's Activities in Siam

Hồ Chí Minh went twice to Siam: first in mid-1928 and subsequently at the beginning of 1930. Different documents and books give different dates for his first arrival in Siam, with many Western works following Hoàng Văn Hoan's (1988) and Lê Mạnh Trinh's (1975) memoirs.

Lê Mạnh Trinh did not specify when Hồ Chí Minh arrived in Siam but mentioned that he arrived in Ban Dong, Phichit in the autumn of 1928 (Lê Mạnh Trinh 1975, 31). Hoàng Văn Hoan,[14] in his memoir entitled *A Drop in the Ocean: Hoang Van Hoan's Revolutionary Reminiscences*, stated that Hồ Chí Minh first arrived in Siam in August 1928 and stayed between August 1928 and September 1929, then left for Hong Kong (Hoàng Văn Hoan 1988, 47, 51–52). He came back again and stayed briefly from March–April 1930.

Goscha (1999, 75–76, 102, footnote 68), however, asserts that Hồ Chí Minh arrived in

13) In 1928, Klong Toey port did not exist. BI port was the first port of Siam. It was used by big maritime companies in Europe such as East Asiatic of Denmark, Bombay-Burmah Trading Company, and the British company Louis T. Leonowens, to export teakwood from northern Siam and rice from central Siam and to import goods from Europe (Sukpreeda 2006, 55).

14) Hoàng Văn Hoan (1905–91) was Hồ Chí Minh's student in Guangdong in 1926. He arrived in Siam via Laos in May 1928 and worked closely with Hồ Chí Minh. He was a founding member of the Indochinese Communist Party and a Politburo member of the Lao Động Party (Vietnam Workers' Party or VWP) from 1960 to 1976. Hoàng Văn Hoan was a crucial link between the Democratic Republic of Vietnam and China, ambassador to Beijing from 1950–57, and leader of many delegations to China as vice-chairman of the DRV National Assembly Standing Committee in the 1960s. He lost much of his influence after Hồ Chí Minh's death in 1969, particularly after the Fourth National Party Congress in 1977, when the Vietnamese Communists shifted to a pro-Soviet position. Hoàng defected to Beijing in July 1979, after shaking off political persecution by the Vietnamese communist authorities.

Map 2 Map Showing the Locations of Districts and Provinces

Source: http://www.google.com, accessed on December 5, 2012.

Note: Boundary representation is not necessarily authoritative. Names in Vietnam are shown without diacritical marks.

Siam sometime in mid-1928, left Siam at the end of 1929,[15] and returned to Siam again in March 1930. According to William Duiker (2000, 150), he arrived in Siam in July 1928, left at the end of 1929, and came back in April 1930. He stayed briefly in Bangkok and Udon Thani, before leaving the country. Sophie Quinn-Judge (2002, 126) claims that Hồ Chí Minh spent time in Siam from July 1928–November 1929.

According to *Hồ Chí Minh Toàn Tập* (2000, Vol. 3, 13) and Trần Dương, Hồ Chí Minh arrived in Siam in July 1928 and stayed until November 1929, before leaving for China. This information is based on his report to the Comintern written on February 18, 1930. According to Trần Dương (2009, 29), he came back to Siam in March 1930 and left Siam at the end of March or the beginning of April 1930.

In Siam, after disembarking at a port near Bangkok and staying there briefly, he went to Ban Dong in the district of Phichit and then to Udon Thani. From Udon Thani, he continued to Sakon Nakhon (สกลนคร), Nakhon Phanom, as well as Nong Khai (หนองคาย). He left Siam for China and stayed in Hong Kong and Shanghai during the winter of 1929–30 (Figuères 1970, 43). He then returned to Siam in March and April 1930, staying briefly in Bangkok and Udon Thani, before leaving Siam for good.

According to Sukpreeda, during his first trip to Siam, Hồ Chí Minh visited an Annamese temple called Wat Lokanukhlor (วัดโลกานุเคราะห์) in Thai, or Chùa Từ Tế in Vietnamese. This temple is located within the Chinese community on Rajawong Road (ราชวงศ์) in Bangkok (Sukpreeda 2006, 55). Sukpreeda notes that there were many overseas Chinese residents as well as Nanyang Chinese in this area. Less than 100 m from the temple was a crossroad where Sun Yat Sen had given a speech to the overseas Chinese two or three years before October 1911 (*ibid.*). Wat Lokanukhlor or Chùa Từ Tế was a meeting-point for the Vietnamese cadres at that time. Hồ Chí Minh went to this temple to see the abbot Sư Cụ Ba or Bình Lương Ba, who was a Vietnamese patriot with links to the Vietnamese in Siam. He was part of the Mouvement des Lettres patriotes that had sought refuge in Siam and he had also founded the temple. Later when he was seriously sick in 1964, Ho Chi Minh sent a plane to repatriate him to Hanoi to be hospitalized in Bệnh viện Hữu Nghị Việt-Xô (Việt-Xô Friendship Hospital) (Trần Dương 2009, 115). Hồ Chí Minh also visited him at the hospital. He stayed briefly in the temple before leaving for Ban Dong in Phichit.

From Bangkok to Ban Dong

According to Duiker (2000, 151), Hồ Chí Minh arrived in Ban Dong in August 1928; Lê

15) Goscha believed that Hồ Chí Minh left Siam in December 1929 for Shanghai.

Mạnh Trinh in *Cuộc Vận Động Cứu Quốc Của Việt kiều ở Thái Lan* (1961, 116) dates his arrival to the autumn of 1928.[16)]

Ban Dong is located near Nan river (แม่น้ำน่าน), which is a tributary of Chao Phraya river (แม่น้ำเจ้าพระยา). Ban Dong was part of Phichit district in Nakhon Sawan province, but today Phichit district has become a province on its own and Ban Dong is now called Ban Noeun Sa Mo (บ้านเนินสมอ), under Pa Ma Khab (ป่ามะคาบ) district in Phichit province.[17)] Phichit is approximately 340 km from Bangkok and is accessible by train and boat.

After Ban Tham in Paknampho, site of the first Vietnamese community and center of the movement set up by Đặng Thúc Hứa, was closed in 1914 by local authorities under French pressure, the Vietnamese moved to Ban Dong, 100 km away. The Vietnamese had been allowed by a Siamese prince, who sympathized with the Vietnamese resistance against the French, to settle down and start plantations in Ban Tham in 1910, when Phan Bội Châu was in Bangkok (Goscha 1999, 33).

According to Ngô Vĩnh Bao in *Cuộc Hành Trình Của Bác Hồ Trên Đất Thái Lan*, Hồ Chí Minh went to Phichit by train and stayed in a hotel (Trần Dương 2009, 42). The next day he went to a shop named Quyên Truyền Thịnh, owned by an overseas Chinese sympathetic to the Việt Kiều's cause. This shop was in fact a clandestine contact point between Ban Dong, Guangzhou, and Hong Kong, ideal to hide from the eyes of the Siamese authorities and French spies. At the shop, Hồ Chí Minh gave a sheet of paper to the shop's owner containing a message for Võ Tùng (Lữ Thế Hành or Lưu Khải Hồng) (*ibid.*).[18)] According to Trần Dương, the message was received by Võ Tùng's compatriot named Hy. As Võ Tùng was busy in the rice field, Hy came to pick Hồ Chí Minh by boat, but he refused to go with him. He wanted to see Võ Tùng in person. Hy had to return and Võ Tùng came personally to receive Hồ Chí Minh (*ibid.*, 43). This shows that Hồ Chí Minh was very cautious. In *Con Người và Con Đường*, Đặng Quỳnh Anh mentioned that one night Võ Tùng returned home with a man, later identified as Nguyễn Ái Quốc or Hồ Chí Minh (Sơn Tùng 1993, 158). This confirms that Hồ Chí Minh arrived in Ban Dong with Võ Tùng. According to Trần Đình Lưu (2004, 60–61), Võ Tùng introduced his guest as a close friend from Guangzhou and a

16) Lê Mạnh Trinh was Hồ Chí Minh's student in Guangdong in 1926 and Hoàng Văn Hoan's classmate in Guangdong. He worked closely with Đặng Thúc Hứa and Hồ Chí Minh.

17) Ngô Vĩnh Bao in Trần Dương, *Cuộc Hành Trình Của Bác Hồ Trên Đất Thái Lan* (2009, 105) mentioned Pa Ma Kham (ป่ามะขาม) instead of Pa Ma Khab (ป่ามะคาบ). This was confirmed by Sukpreeda, and an elderly Việt Kiều in Sakon Nakhon who had moved from Phichit.

18) Võ Tùng arrived in Siam twice—in 1914 and in mid-1919. Võ Tùng was from central Vietnam and he came to know Đặng Thúc Hứa in China. In 1919 he went to Ban Dong to join Đặng Thúc Hứa in rebuilding bases among the Vietnamese there. He had served in Phan Bội Châu's forces and as an officer in the Kuomintang army before World War I. Võ Tùng shared his life with Đặng Quỳnh Anh after arriving in Siam.

medicine trader named Thầu Chín[19] (*ibid.*, 61) and that he was here to stay for a while. In Ban Dong, Hồ Chí Minh stayed in Võ Tùng and Đặng Quỳnh Anh's house.

According to Lê Mạnh Trinh (1961, 32) and Trần Đình Lưu (2004, 61–62), Hồ Chí Minh stayed in Phichit for around 10 days; according to Duiker (2000, 151), he stayed for two weeks before leaving for Udon Thani in northeastern Siam. Đặng Quỳnh Anh in her interview by Sơn Tùng in *Con Người và Con Đường* states that during his stay in Ban Dong, he also made trips to nearby areas with his compatriots such as Đặng Thúc Hứa, Võ Tùng, Đặng Thái Thuyến, and Ngọc Ân (Trần Đình Lưu 2004, 64). All of them arrived in Ban Dong in the 1910s, that is, before Hồ Chí Minh.

Hồ Chí Minh used his time in Ban Dong to educate the Việt Kiều. He informed them about the political situation in Vietnam and around the world, and taught them how to hold discussions, elevating the political level and revolutionary understanding of the Vietnamese people in Ban Dong. He usually exchanged views with Đặng Thúc Hứa, Võ Tùng, Đặng Thái Thuyến, and other colleagues. In the daytime he engaged in physical work in the fields with his compatriots and cleaned the house; at night he gathered the people to instruct them about politics. His lectures were simple and brief but meaningful and persuasive. They usually consisted of three parts. The first part was about the situation in Vietnam and in the world, as well as the cooperation of Vietnamese in other places. The second part concerned revolutionary theory and the last part was dedicated to answering questions or explaining unclear points. His teaching on politics always combined Marxist-Leninist theory with the main strategies of the Vietnamese revolution, explaining the way to gain independence and freedom.

Words such as "comrade," "imperialism," "socialism," "Marxism," "Lenin," and "Stalin" were heard for the first time among the Vietnamese in Siam during the meeting in Ban Dong (*ibid.*, 63). He explained that "comrades" or "đồng chí" in Vietnamese meant people sharing the same will and fighting for the same purpose (*ibid.*, 62). While in Ban Dong, he moved from one community to another and spent time meeting with the Vietnamese and teaching them to behave well, to follow Thai law, to preserve Vietnamese culture, to help each other, to be honest, and to take good care of their children.

Vietnamese Revolutionary Organizations in Siam in the Mid-1920s

Even prior to Hồ Chí Minh's arrival in Siam, Vietnamese revolutionary organizations had already been established in the country, starting with Ban Dong (Phichit).

19) *Thầu* (เฒ่า) in Thai means senior or old person.

As mentioned earlier, when Phan Bội Châu arrived in Siam for the third time in 1910, the Siamese government made arrangements for him and his student to reside in Ban Tham, Paknampho and use the land for plantations. Đặng Thúc Hứa was in charge of this place. Later, Đặng Quỳnh Anh was sent to Ban Tham to take responsibility of this Ban and the Vietnamese children. In 1914, Ban Tham was closed due to the pressure the French exerted on the Siamese government. Consequently, Đặng Thúc Hứa and Đặng Quỳnh Anh had to move to Ban Dong, Phichit, which was also closed in 1917. Đặng Thúc Hứa had to sell the farm and he left for southern China with his student (Goscha 1999, 64), while Đặng Quỳnh Anh left for Lampang (ลำปาง) (Sơn Tùng 1993, 79).

Đặng Thúc Hứa returned to Ban Dong in 1919 and rebuilt it with the help of Đặng Quỳnh Anh. We can see that the setting up of communities turned bases during the 1910s was not very stable. In the beginning of the 1920s, Đặng Thúc Hứa had increasingly gathered the Vietnamese, particularly those along the Mekong river, which was used as a contact point for the Vietnamese base in central Vietnam and to receive the Vietnamese coming from Nghệ Tĩnh. Ban Dong became the center of the Vietnamese resistance in Siam and the main political training center for the revolutionary youth (*ibid.*, 81, 89–91; Goscha 1999, 45–46).

In 1926 a branch of the Vietnamese Revolutionary Youth League (Việt Nam Thanh Niên Cách Mạng Đồng Chí Hội) was established (Lê Mạnh Trinh 1961, 3, 33) by Hồ Tùng Mậu who arrived in Siam in 1925.[20] It came under the direction of the Vietnamese Revolutionary Youth League in Guangzhou (later moved to Hong Kong) that was set up in 1925. Võ Tùng was nominated Secretary (Trần Đình Lưu 2004, 49–50). In 1927, the second branch of the Vietnamese Revolutionary Youth League (the Youth League) was established in Udon Thani (Lê Mạnh Trinh 1961, 33).

The main task of the Youth League was to teach the Việt Kiều and awaken their consciousness of nationalism; establish communications between Vietnam and the Youth League in Guangzhou; and receive and train patriots from Vietnam. Two organizations were set up in 1926: Cooperatives (Hội Hợp Tác) and the Việt Kiều Friendship Organization (Hội Việt Kiều Thân Ái) (Hoàng Văn Hoan 1988, 36; Lê Mạnh Trinh 1961, 24–26). The first Cooperatives and the Việt Kiều Friendship Organization appeared in Ban Dong in 1926, followed by Udon, Sakon Nakhon, and Nakhon Phanom in 1927 and 1928.

The Cooperatives was an organization of patriotic youth who were involved in the revolutionary movement. This included both Việt Kiều in Siam and Vietnamese from Vietnam (Trần Đình Lưu 2004, 49; Duiker 2000, 151). The youth from Vietnam were mostly

20) Hồ Tùng Mậu (1896–1951) was born in Nghệ An province. He was first trained in Siam in the early 1920s by Đặng Thúc Hứa before travelling to Guangdong, where he joined the Youth League. He was seen as reliable and sent by Hồ Chí Minh to Siam in 1925 to set up the Vietnamese Revolutionary Youth League in Ban Dong in 1926.

intellectuals from the lower middle class or students. The Cooperatives trained reserve forces for the Youth League and gave them an understanding of politics and patriotism. It selected the best members to the Youth League and sent them to Guangzhou or back to Vietnam to work clandestinely.

The youth lived in collectives. Some worked on the farm in groups of five or six, while other specialized in sawing, bricklaying, carpentry, and trade. They made their own work plan and shared the tasks. They put aside part of the harvest for the community's consumption and sold the rest of it. The income was spent on living expenses for each group and the rest went into common funds for the Cooperatives, which would be used for sending people to Vietnam or China, building schools, subsidizing student expenses, and paying the printing costs of propaganda and publication. The Cooperatives also recruited Việt Kiều who resided permanently in Siam. These Việt Kiều were independently engaged in small businesses and were in a good financial situation, so they could contribute funds in accordance to their ability. They also helped exiled patriots or orphans, and leveraged their status to deal with the local authorities. The Cooperatives from the early 1920s were well organized and well managed, especially in terms of their budget. This gave the Vietnamese confidence in their cause. With the hard work of members, after five or six years, the Cooperatives had gathered enough funds to carry out revolutionary missions.

The Việt Kiều Friendship Organization was a broad organization that could be found almost everywhere the Việt Kiều resided, particularly in the northeastern provinces of Siam. There were two kinds of members: full members and associate members. Full members registered with the organization, paid fees, and attended meetings regularly. Associate members were scattered in various remote areas and could not meet regularly. They provided moral support and material assistance to the organization to the best of their abilities. Though some of the Việt Kiều had lived in Siam for a long time and had obtained Thai nationality, they were still attached to Vietnam. Organizations affiliated with the Việt Kiều Friendship Organization were the Women's Group and the Youth and Children Group (Lê Mạnh Trinh 1961, 26).

From Ban Dong (Phichit) to Udon Thani

According to Duiker (2000, 151), Hồ Chí Minh left Ban Dong for Udon Thani in September 1928. Hoàng Văn Hoan[21] stated that Hồ Chí Minh took 15 days to travel by foot from Ban Dong to Udon, arriving in August 1928 (Goscha 1999, 47). According to Lê Mạnh Trinh,

21) Hoàng Văn Hoan was with Hồ Chí Minh at Ban Nong Bua (Udon).

his trip took 40 days, but for Đặng Quỳnh Anh, it was only slightly more than 10 days (Sơn Tùng 1993, 153). He was accompanied by Đặng Thái Thuyến, Võ Tùng, Ngọc Ân, and probably also Đặng Thúc Hứa. The distance between Ban Dong and Udon is approximately 500 km. Forty days seems too long; if the trip really took so long, Hồ Chí Minh and his colleagues might have stopped in a few places along the way to observe the condition of the Vietnamese and the topography along the route.

Udon Thani is a big town and the center of northeastern Siam. It is easily accessible from Khon Kaen (ขอนแก่น), Nong Khai, Sakon Nakhon, Nakhon Phanom, and Mukdahan (มุกดาหาร). Udon Thani was packed with Việt Kiều. The number of Việt Kiều there was bigger than in Phichit because Udon was located not far from the Mekong and was one of the receiving points of the Vietnamese from central Vietnam. As such, Hồ Chí Minh stayed for quite a while in order to meet, educate, and encourage the Việt Kiều to participate in anti-colonial and revolutionary activities.

Even before Hồ Chí Minh's arrival in Udon, Đặng Thúc Hứa, Võ Tùng, and other cadres had already started in 1924 to establish a new base in Ban Nong Bua (บ้านหนองบัว), 3 km from the center of Udon. This base served as a connecting point between Phichit and Nakhon Phanom because the base in Phichit was too far from the base in Nakhon Phanom, which served as the reception base of the Vietnamese from central Vietnam.

A branch of the Youth League in Udon was set up in 1927, as well as the Cooperatives and the Việt Kiều Friendship Organization. At the first meeting of the Youth League in Udon, Hồ Chí Minh gave a report of the global situation and the struggle of the socialist revolution in general and in Vietnam in particular. He suggested an expansion of the organization, a reorganization of the bases, and the building of a close and harmonious relationship with the Thai people, giving due respect to Thai customs, traditions, and laws (Lê Mạnh Trinh 1961, 34). As for the Cooperatives, initially only the Vietnamese who had come to Siam from Vietnam were accepted as members, but Hồ Chí Minh suggested opening it up to any Việt Kiều who volunteered (*ibid.*).

While in Ban Nong Bua, Hồ Chí Minh spent much time translating books, for example, *Historical Materialism* (translated to *History of Human Evolution*) and *ABC of Communism* by Bhukarin and Preobrazhensky, to be used for the mobilization and training of young cadres of the League (Brocheux 2003, 80; 2007, 46). He worked with Hoàng Văn Hoan on the translations, with him reading, particularly the texts in Chinese, and translating, and Hoàng Văn Hoan transcribing. Hồ Chí Minh also conducted political classes for the cadres of the Youth League, reorganized the activities and lifestyles of members, raised their consciousness of patriotism, and encouraged them to work in the farms with the Việt Kiều. He encouraged the Việt Kiều to learn Thai and to send their children to schools to learn Thai and Vietnamese, urging them to ask permission from the local authorities to open schools for

children. When permission had been granted, he also took part in the building of the school.

Initially, most of the Việt Kiều considered Thailand as a temporary homeland. They were eager to return to Vietnam to join the resistance movement and waited for the declaration of independence to return. As such, they did not focus on life in Siam. They did not learn Thai and did not allow their children to do so either (Trần Đình Lưu 2004, 86). But Hồ Chí Minh realized that the colonial resistance in Siam would be a long-running matter and that it was necessary for the Việt Kiều to learn the Siamese language and familiarize themselves with the people, culture, and authorities. In this way, the Việt Kiều would gain the friendship and sympathy of the Siamese people, and local authorities would not object toViệt Kiều activities and movements.

After Đặng Thúc Hứa received permission from the Siamese local authorities to use land to build a farm and plant rice in Ban Nong Bua, the Vietnamese moved in rapidly. The number of Vietnamese families in the Ban Nong Bua community increased from 40 in 1925 to 100 in 1929, and continued to grow (Goscha 1999, 48). After Ban Nong Bua, Đặng Thúc Hứa and his colleagues expanded their activities by setting up another community and base at Ban Nong On (บ้านหนองโอน), 13 km from the center of Udon where currently stands Hồ Chí Minh's house.

Beside these bases, Đặng Thúc Hứa, Võ Tùng, and their comrades also went to other provinces to reach out to more Việt Kiều, such as Sakon Nakhon, Nong Khai, Nakhon Phanom (in Tha Uthen and That Phanom districts), and Ubon Rachathani (Trần Đình Lưu 2004, 46). At Ban Nong Bua and Ban Nong On in Udon, Hồ Chí Minh drew up a clear plan of activities for the community, such as farming in the day and attending political classes and listening to the news at night. These two villages became populous and strong revolutionary bases receiving young people from Vietnam who were first received in Ban May in Nakhon Phanom. After a short stay in Ban May, if they proved to be reliable patriots, they would be sent for preliminary instruction and language training in Ban Nong Bua and Ban Nong On. If they then showed promise, they would be transferred from Udon to Ban Dong for advanced studies on politics. From there some of them would be sent to China on missions (Goscha 1999, 48). The bases in Udon thus became an important midpoint base connecting Ban Dong in Phichit and Nakhon Phanom.

From Udon, Hồ Chí Minh also made some visits to Nong Khai.[22] He stayed near a temple called Wat Srichomcheun (วัดศรีชมชื่น). According to Nguyễn Tài, he accompanied Hồ Chí Minh to Nong Khai in November 1928 in order to meet with Mau and Chu coming from Vientiane, who came to report to Hồ Chí Minh about the situation in Laos and the activities of the Vietnamese there. According to Nguyễn Tài, the contact point in Nong Khai

22) The distance between Udon and Nong Khai is approximately 65 km.

was a tailor's shop owned by Lục (Trần Dương 2009, 106). Hồ Chí Minh stayed in Nong Khai for six days in November 1928 (*ibid.*). From Udon, Hồ Chí Minh continued on his journey to Sakon Nakhon and Nakhon Phanom.

From Udon Thani to Sakon Nakhon and Nakhon Phanom

Sakon Nakhon and Nakhon Phanom, in particular, are two other provinces with a large number of Việt Kiều. To reach Nakhon Phanom from Udon, it was necessary to pass by the Sawang Daendin (สว่างแดนดิน) and Muong districts of Sakon Nakhon. Nakhon Phanom and central Vietnam are connected to Laos, which is why Nakhon Phanom was strategically well placed as the receiving point of patriots and revolutionaries from Vietnam. Nakhon Phanom served as the main liaison point between the cadres in Vietnam and the Vietnamese Revolution Youth League in Ban Dong, who were in contact with the Vietnamese Revolution Youth League in Guangzhou via Bangkok.

From Udon, Hồ Chí Minh, accompanied by Nguyễn Tài, went to Sawang Daendin district and then to Muang district of Sakon Nakhon where he stayed in Đặng Văn Cáp's traditional medicine shop. In Sakon Nakhon, the Việt Kiều Friendship Organization, the Cooperatives, and classes for Việt Kiều children were already in place (Trần Đình Lưu 2004, 69). As in Udon, he organized political classes, updated the teaching of theories of Marxist-Leninist theory and nationalism, and taught new patriotic poems and songs. From Sakon Nakhon, he proceeded to Nakhon Phanom with its three strong revolutionary bases: Ban May (บ้านใหม่), presently called Ban Na Chok; Ban Ton Phung (บ้านต้นผึ้ง); and Ban Wat Pa (บ้านวัดป่า). It was in Ban May that he stayed the longest.

In Ban May, 5 km from the Mekong, hundreds of cadres had already been trained (*ibid.*, 70). Hồ Chí Minh's purpose in going to Nakhon Phanom was not only to instruct the movement or organize political classes for the cadres; he also wanted to establish a liaison point between central Vietnam and Laos so as to investigate revolutionary potential in Laos and set up a branch of the Vietnamese Youth League in Laos, to make the transition to communism (Goscha 1999, 79). For this purpose, according to Hoàng Văn Hoan (1988, 51), Hồ Chí Minh took a boat from Nakhon Phanom with Nguyễn Tài, crossing the Mekong to inspect the Youth League's activities among the Việt Kiều in Laos.

I had the opportunity to cross the Mekong from Nakhon Phanom to Ban Xieng Vang (บ้านเซียงวาง or บ้านเซียงหวาง) in Khammuon province in Laos,[23] to meet an old revolutionary

23) Ban Xieng Vang is located on the banks of the Mekong, 10 km from Tha Khek town and across from Nakhon Phanom province. After the paper was written and accepted in September 2012, I had an opportunity to conduct field research again in Laos. This allowed me to update some information.

Việt Kiều whose family lived there when Hồ Chí Minh was in the village. I was aware that Hồ Chí Minh had met up with some Vietnamese to discuss their revolutionary activities there. It is believed that he did not stay there for long because there was a high risk of being followed and arrested by the French who were everywhere in Laos. His visit, though short, deserves more attention.

Ban Xieng Vang is now located in Nong Bok district (บ้านหนองบก), 27 km from Tha Khek town in Khammuon province in Laos and across from Nakhon Phanom province. At present, it takes 30–40 minutes to drive from Tha Khek town to Ban Xieng Vang. During the anti-French and anti-American periods, Vietnamese revolutionaries from Vietnam would pass through Ban Xieng Vang before crossing the Mekong to Nakhon Phanom. A number of Việt Kiều fleeing from the French in Vietnam, from Nghệ Tĩnh in particular, resided there. According to Đặng Văn Hồng,[24] there were 5,000 Vietnamese in Ban Xieng Vang in the anti-French period. In 1946, the French learned that Ban Xieng Vang was a strategic point for the Vietnamese resistance operation.

Đặng Văn Hồng was informed by Ông Khu, a Vietnamese in Ban Xieng Vang, that Hồ Chí Minh was accompanied by two persons to Ban Xieng Vang in 1928, but returned to Siam with only one person, probably Nguyễn Tài. I believe that it was Ông Khu who remained in Ban Xieng Vang. Đặng Văn Hồng did not have any idea how many days Hồ Chí Minh stayed in Ban Xieng Vang but was told that Hồ Chí Minh stayed at the residence of Đặng Văn Yến, who had relatives in Ban Na Chok. Some Việt Kiều in Nakhon Phanom speculated that Hồ Chí Minh might have crossed the Mekong from Ban Nard (บ้านหนาด) in Nakhon Phanom, where a number of Vietnamese resided, to Ban Tha (บ้านท่า) in Laos, and continued approximately 2 km to Ban Xieng Vang.

I did not find any memoirs mentioning Hồ Chí Minh's stay in Ban Xieng Vang. At present, it is recognized by the Vietnamese Museum of Hồ Chí Minh in Hanoi as a place visited by Hồ Chí Minh. Vietnam and Laos have jointly built Hồ Chí Minh's memorial site consisting of the museum and his altar, built on land donated by the Việt Kiều in Laos and Thailand. This memorial site has been officially inaugurated in December 2012. I had opportunity to visit the site for the second time on September 11, 2013.

During the journey from Udon to Nakhon Phanom and during his stay in Ban May, Hồ Chí Minh was believed to have been accompanied by Hoàng Văn Hoan and sometimes by Nguyễn Tài (Hoàng Văn Hoan 1988, 59; Goscha 1999, 79). It is believed that no-one in Ban May knew his identity, apart from Ngoéc Đại[25] (Trần Đình Lưu 2004, 76). He was known

24) Interview with Đặng Văn Hồng on December 8, 2010 at Xieng Vang, Khammuon province in Laos. Đặng Văn Hồng is a Việt Kiều born in 1933 and still living in Ban Xieng Vang.

25) Ngoéc Đại was a patriot who fled to Siam in the early twentieth century. He worked closely with Đặng Thúc Hứa and Đặng Quỳnh Anh and was among those who set up the base in Ban Dong.

instead as Thầu Chín, a member of the Youth League. When he arrived in Ban May, the Cooperatives house was being built. He worked with the Vietnamese and stayed in the house for a time. As he did in Udon and elsewhere, during the day he joined the Cooperatives' activities in farming, gardening, and fishing (*ibid.*, 75), and organized political classes for cadres at night. He also taught the cadres about underground work and the tricks of French detectives in Indochina, and worked for the education of children and the mobilization of women.

While he was in Nakhon Phanom, other than in Ban May, Hồ Chí Minh stayed with the family of Nguyễn Bằng Cát or Hoe Lợi, an active member of the Youth League in Nakhon Phanom. The family did not know his true identity; they only knew that he was an active member of the League. In order not to be detected by authorities during his stay, he arranged to work in Nguyễn Bằng Cát's traditional medicine shop as an apprentice with the name Tín or Chú lang Tín (*ibid.*).

According to Ngô Vĩnh Bao in *Cuộc Hành Trình Của Bác Hồ Trên Đất Thái Lan*, apart from Muang district of Nakhon Phanom, Hồ Chí Minh also visited Tha Uthen and That Phanom districts, and stayed with six or seven Việt Kiều families in Na-ke (นาแก) district, 27 km from Muang (Trần Dương 2009, 91). He was accompanied by Nguyễn Tài (*ibid.*, 94).

He operated in Siam until November 1929 according to *Hồ Chí Minh Toàn Tập* (2000, Vol. 3, 11). Goscha (1999, 77) mentioned that he left Siam for Hong Kong in late November or early December 1929. In *Ho Chi Minh: Du révolutionnaire à l'icône* (2003, 81), Brocheux states that Hồ Chí Minh arrived in Hong Kong on December 23, 1929 under the name of Song Man Cho to lay the foundation of a communist party. Whether it was in November or December, we know that he arrived at the end of 1929. At the same time, there was political chaos in Vietnam and conflicts broke out among Vietnamese communist organizations. He thus had to leave Siam for Hong Kong and Shanghai to resolve problems. It was impossible, however, to pass through the Vietnam-Laos border as it was under tight French control, so he went to Bangkok and took a boat to China. Assigned by the Far East Bureau of the Comintern, he convened a meeting of representatives in Hong Kong and succeeded in merging various organizations into the Communist Party of Vietnam, which was founded on February 3, 1930 (Hoàng Văn Hoan 1988, 51–52).

He came back to Bangkok by boat for the second time in March 1930 (Goscha 1999, 78).[26] He met with Chinese communists in Bangkok before moving to Udon Thani to inform the members of the Udon Provincial Committee of the Youth League regarding the merger of the various Vietnamese communist groups, and to transmit the views of the Communist International regarding the foundation of the Siamese Communist Party (Hoàng Văn Hoan

26) According to Hoàng Văn Hoan, he came back to Bangkok in April 1930.

1988, 52). He told them that according to the guidelines of the resolution adopted by the Comintern, communists should participate in the proletarian revolutionary activities of the country in which they reside. Therefore, Vietnamese communists living in Siam had the duty of assisting the oppressed and exploited people in Siam to engage in revolutionary activities (*ibid.*, 53).

On April 20, 1930, Hồ Chí Minh, in his capacity as representative of the Comintern, convened a meeting at Tun Ky Hotel in front of the Hua Lamphong (หัวลำโพง) central railway station in Bangkok[27] where he announced the founding of the Siamese Communist Party (*ibid.*, 55). After that, he went to Malaya to help his comrades establish the Malayan Communist Party. According to Hoàng Văn Hoan, Hồ Chí Minh never returned to Siam again (*ibid.*). During his two visits in Siam, he had trained revolutionary cadres, fostered proletarian internationalism among the Vietnamese revolutionaries residing in Siam, and formed the Siamese Communist Party. The party was formed mainly by the Chinese and Vietnamese in Siam, with the help of the Comintern (*ibid.*, 55–57, 76, 78). A number of members of the Youth League in Siam also joined under Hồ Chí Minh's persuasion.

Ngô Chính Quốc or Lý, a Vietnamese born in Siam, and Trần Văn Chân or Tăng, were elected to the central executive committee of the party, later called Siam Committee (*ibid.*, 55). Ngô Chính Quốc was also elected the first secretary-general of the party.[28] In 1930, Hoàng Văn Hoan became a member of the Siam Committee (*ibid.*, 63), and in 1933 he was in charge of propaganda (*ibid.*, 76) after Ngô Chính Quốc was arrested in Bangkok and handed over by the Siamese authorities to the French (*ibid.*, 63).

Hồ Chí Minh's Strategies in Siam

We can see that Hồ Chí Minh used various strategies during his mission in Siam in order to minimize the risk of being arrested by Siam authorities and to hide from the French intelligence agents.[29] He used pseudonyms and was always escorted by his compatriots wherever he went. He led a simple life and disguised himself, for example, as a traditional medicine apprentice. He also used liaison persons to contact Siamese local authorities and set liaison points—a small shop in Ban Dong, traditional medicine halls in Udon, Sakon Nakhon, and

27) Following many discussions with Thong Chaemsri (ธง แจ่มศรี), the former secretary of the Communist Party of Thailand from 2003–8, in February 2011, and in March and July 2013. Also from numerous discussions with Sukpreeda Bhanomyong from 2003–8.

28) Following discussions with Thong Chaemsri in July 2004, in February 2011, and in March 2013.

29) Regarding strategies and techniques employed by communist agents in their revolutionary operations, see Onimaru (2011).

Nakhon Phanom, temples including Wat Lokanukhlor in Bangkok or in the vicinity of temples such as Wat Sichomchuen (วัดศรีชมชื่น) in Thabo (ท่าบ่อ), Nong Khai.

In general, the Siamese authorities did not pay much attention to the activities of the Vietnamese in Siam, but when events in Vietnam provoked the fleeing of Vietnamese to Siam, the French would ask the Siamese authorities to watch the Vietnamese communities and their activities. Hồ Chí Minh's mission in Siam was confidential and required secrecy. Disclosure of his identity could lead to his arrest and the destruction of the network. It is interesting to see how Hồ Chí Minh hid his identity, with whom he travelled in Siam, and how he escaped detection by local authorities in Siam.

Firstly he used pseudonyms when abroad. One of the pseudonyms he used in China was Lý Thụy. In Siam, he used the names Nguyễn Lai, Thầu Chín, Thọ, Tín or Chú lang Tín, and Nam Sơn as his pen name. He even changed names when moving from one place to another. When he arrived in Bangkok for the first time, his passport carried the name Lai or Nguyễn Lai. When he was in Ban Dong, he was known as Thầu Chín. When he was at Nguyên Bằng Cát's traditional medicine shop in Nakhon Phanom, his name was Tín or Chú lang Tín. Only a select few knew his true identity—those he had met before or had been his students in Guangdong. Among them were Đặng Thúc Hứa, Võ Tùng, Hoàng Văn Hoan, Lê Mạnh Trinh, Đặng Thái Thuyến, Nguyễn Tài, and Đặng Quỳnh Anh, who was Võ Tùng's wife and Nguyễn Thị Thanh's friend.[30] All these people kept Hồ Chí Minh's identity a secret.

Other revolutionary leaders also used pseudonyms when they were in Siam. Võ Tùng used Sáu or Sáu Tùng, and in China, Lữ Thế Hanh or Lưu Khải Hồng. Hoàng Văn Hoan used Nghĩa and Dương. Lê Mạnh Trinh used Tiến, Nhuận, and Tú Trinh. Hồ Tùng Mậu used Ích. Nguyễn Tài used Lê Ngôn, also Tài Ngôn. Đặng Thái Thuyến used Đặng Canh Tân, while Ngọc Ân used Nghĩa. Đặng Thúc Hứa or Cụ Ngọ Sinh was called Cố Đi or Tú Đi. "Cố" means senior person and "Đi" means walking, so Cố Đi means a senior person who has travelled much by foot.

Hồ Chí Minh blended in by leading a simple life. He also participated in physical work such working on farms, gardening, and laying bricks for the school building in Ban Nong Bua. During his voyage from province to province, he also carried belongings like his companions. In this way, he was not perceived differently from others. He also learned some Siamese words every day.

Another strategy he adopted was to always be on the move. His longest stay was in Nakhon Phanom and Udon. In Nakhon Phanom, he stayed in Ban May and a traditional medicine shop owned by Nguyễn Bằng Cát or Hoe Lợi, under the name of Chú lang Tín. In

30) Nguyễn Thị Thanh was Hồ Chí Minh's sister who was supposed to travel to Siam with Đặng Quỳnh Anh but fell ill on the day of the departure.

Udon, he stayed in Ban Nong Bua and Ban Nong On, and in another traditional medicine shop owned by Đặng Văn Cáp,[31] taking on the identity of an apprentice. In Sakon Nakhon, he stayed at yet another medicine shop owned by Đặng Văn Cáp. I believe that Hồ Chí Minh chose to stay in these traditional medicine shops for two reasons: he wanted to use these shops as liaison points for the Vietnamese revolutionaries and he wanted to learn about traditional medicine (Trần Dương 2009, 72). Sophie Quinn-Judge (2002, 129) mentioned that according to Đặng Văn Cáp's memoirs, Hồ Chí Minh wished to learn how to use traditional medicine to treat sick villagers and possibly to cure his own tuberculosis. Hồ Chí Minh had revealed to his Vietnamese colleague in Hong Kong that he had been sick for more than a year in Siam.

During his stay in Siam, it did not seem that Hồ Chí Minh had direct contact with local authorities. This was to avoid being suspected or followed by Thai police and the French intelligence agents. Consequently, in order to get permission from local authorities to build a school in Ban Nong Bua, he suggested that his compatriots, the Việt Kiều Cũ or Việt Cũ, the Việt Kiều of the older generation who had lived in Siam for a long time and were familiar with the Siamese local authorities, do so. Hoàng Sâm, pseudonym Kỳ (Hoàng Văn Hoan 1988, 75), was one of Hồ Chí Minh's intermediaries for two years.[32] He had studied and resided for a long time in Udon Thani so he was on good terms with local authorities. He later became a Vietnamese general in the army of the Democratic Republic of Vietnam (Trần Đình Lưu 2004, 86–87), or colonel according to Goscha (1999, 102, footnote 66).

There were occasions, however, where Hồ Chí Minh came under suspicion and was followed by local authorities who were under French pressure. Once in Udon Thani, he was followed by the police and took refuge in a Buddhist temple named Phothi Somporn or Wat Phothi Somporn (วัดโพธิสมภรณ์), whose construction he had taken part in as a bricklayer. He was protected by the abbot Phra Kru Thammajedi (พระครูธรรมะเจดีย์), who forbade the police from entering the temple, assuring them that there were no "bad people" in the temple. It was believed that the abbot did not know Hồ Chí Minh's true identity at that time. This story was later told by the abbot himself to Phan Văn Tượng, a Việt Kiều representative in Udon.[33] On another occasion, Hồ Chí Minh found himself tailed while in Thabo, Nong Khai. He was saved by a seven-year-old girl who saw him trying to dodge the police. She put a rope tethered to her buffalo in Hồ Chí Minh's hand and handed him a hat, allowing him to pass off as a farmer bringing his buffalo to the rice field. It appears that the French intelligent agents had learned of his presence in Siam at that time. This could have been due to the

31) Đặng Văn Cáp later became President of the Oriental Medicine Association in Vietnam (Chủ tịch Hội Đông Y Việt Nam) (Trần Dương 2009, 71).

32) Hoàng Sâm was born in Udon Thani (Goscha 1999, 102, footnote 60).

33) This story was recounted to me by Anh Hùng, a Việt Kiều in Udon Thani.

Photo 1 Đặng Thúc Hứa's Cemetery in Wat Ban Chik or Wat Thipayaratnimitre, Udon Thani (Photo by Thanyathip Sripana, February 2011)

changing of the name of a newspaper *Đồng Thanh* to *Thân Ái*, and by the articles he wrote in it. The Việt Kiều had also become more active at that moment.

Though Hồ Chí Minh could move freely from one place to another, he had to be cautious. From 1930 onwards, the Siamese authorities became stricter with the Vietnamese, but Hồ Chí Minh had already left Siam by then. As mentioned earlier, Hồ Chí Minh and Đặng Thúc Hứa taught the Việt Kiều to respect Thai laws and culture. This was a sound strategy because wherever they were (Ban Tham, Ban Dong, Udon Thani, Nakhon Phanom, Nong Khai, or elsewhere), they gained sympathy, friendship, and help from the Siamese people and authorities.

Hồ Chí Minh's instruction and mission in Siam greatly contributed to the Vietnamese revolutionary movement and independence. However, it is worth noting that Hồ Chí Minh's operation was facilitated by Đặng Thúc Hứa's efforts in gathering the Vietnamese into communities beforehand. Thanks to Đặng Thúc Hứa, many bases for long-term patriotic movements were established with the help of his compatriots—not only at Ban Tham in Paknampho, Ban Dong in Phichit, but also in northeastern Siam such as Ban Nong Bua, Ban Nong On in Udon Thani, Sakon Nakhon, Ban May in Nakhon Phanom, etc. It cannot be denied that Đặng Thúc Hứa was the center of the Việt Kiều movement in Siam, although his name has not been mentioned in Vietnam. He spent no less than 20 years in Siam from 1909 and passed away in Udon Thani in 1932. His cemetery is still in Wat Ban Chik (วัดบ้านจิก) or Wat Thipayaratnimitre (วัดทิพยรัตน์นิมิตร) in Muang district, Udon Thani.

Hồ Chí Minh Memorial Houses and the Thai-Vietnamese Friendship Village

Hồ Chí Minh's presence in Siam has attracted attention from both the Thai and Vietnamese general public, and in particular, scholars. The researchers from the Museum of Hồ Chí Minh in Hanoi came to Thailand to conduct research in collaboration with the Việt Kiều. It has even evolved into cultural diplomacy, strengthening the relationship between the two countries. During the ceremony held at Hồ Chí Minh's memorial house in Nakhon Phanom, Udon and that of the Thai-Vietnamese Friendship Village in Ban May, presently called Ban Na Chok, the Vietnamese ambassador evoked Hồ Chí Minh's name on more than one occasion.

Hồ Chí Minh's memorial house in Ban May or Ban Na Chok, Nakhon Phanom was built in the end of 2001 with the support of the Việt Kiều in Nakhon Phanom on Võ Trọng Tiêu's land.[34] It was reconstructed from his memory of the house when he was six years old. It is doubtful that a child can remember accurately the form of the house, but I was told that other elderly Việt Kiều also contributed their memories. This place, according to Võ Trọng Tiêu, was where Hồ Chí Minh stayed for a period of time in Nakhon Phanom. It was also one of the revolutionary bases in Siam. The memorial house was built to recall the presence of Hồ Chí Minh in Ban Na Chok and to strengthen Thai-Vietnamese relationship. The house at Ban Nong On in Udon was built with the same objective.

The Thai-Vietnamese Friendship Village in Ban Na Chok was built after the Hồ Chí Minh memorial house. It includes a small museum recounting Hồ Chí Minh's brief stay in Siam and the itinerary of his journey to other countries after he left Vietnam in 1911. The

Photo 2 Hồ Chí Minh Memorial House in Ban May (Now Called Ban Na Chok), Nakhon Phanom (Photo by Thanyathip Sripana, February 2011)

34) Võ Trọng Tiêu or Uncle Tiêu passed away in September 2011.

Photo 3 Thai-Vietnamese Friendship Village, Ban Na Chok (Ban May), Nakhon Phanom (Photo by Thanyathip Sripana, February 21, 2004)

Friendship Village does not actually have a direct connection to Hồ Chí Minh's sojourn in Siam—it was not where he resided, neither was it used as a revolutionary base. Nonetheless, it was inaugurated by the Thai and Vietnamese prime ministers in February 2004, after the first Thai-Vietnamese joint cabinet in Đà Nẵng. The Friendship Village was built to symbolize the understanding, mutual trust, and development of relations and cultural cooperation between the two countries after the Cold War. It also signifies the recognition of the Việt Kiều by the Thai government and their integration into Thai society.

Every year, Hồ Chí Minh's birth anniversary on May 19 is celebrated in a ceremony that is attended by the Việt Kiều from Nakhon Phanom and other provinces in Thailand, as well as by the Vietnamese from Vietnam, including those who used to live in northeastern Thailand. It is presided by the Vietnamese ambassador or consul general, and the governor of Nakhon Phanom province or other high-ranking authorities.

Another memorial house, located in the Hồ Chí Minh historical site in Ban Nong On, Udon Thani, was inaugurated by the deputy governor of Udon Thani province and the Vietnamese ambassador in Bangkok on September 2, 2006. On August 31, 2011, an educational center at the same site was inaugurated by the Vietnamese consul general and the governor of Udon Thani province. The center and the memorial house are the site of popular celebrations and an exhibition every year on May 19.

The Friendship Village and the memorial houses are visited all year round by Thai, Vietnamese, foreigners, and the Việt Kiều in Thailand, as well as by Vietnamese who used to reside in Thailand but who were repatriated to Vietnam in the beginning of the 1960s. They are called "Việt Kiều Hồi Hương," which means the Việt Kiều who returned to their homeland.

The building of the Friendship Village and Hồ Chí Minh memorial houses in the two provinces was accomplished due to the participation and support of Việt Kiều. As a result,

Photo 4 Hồ Chí Minh Memorial House in Ban Nong On, Udon Thani (Photo by Thanyathip Sripana, February 2011)

Photo 5 Việt Kiều in Thailand, Vietnamese, and Thai on the Occasion of the Opening Ceremony of the Thai-Vietnamese Friendship Village, Ban Na Chok, Nakhon Phanom (Photo by a Việt Kiều, February 21, 2004)

the Friendship Village, Hồ Chí Minh's memorial houses, and the Việt Kiều are considered as a cultural bridge linking the people of the two countries and a strong base of the Thai-Vietnamese relationship (Thanyathip 2004a).

Conclusion

Siam was well placed to serve as an anti-colonial base in the west of central Vietnam, especially after Chiang Kai Shek's repression of the Chinese communists in Guangdong and its repercussions on the Vietnamese anti-colonial movement. Geographically, Siam is acces-

sible from Vietnam by land via Laos, and from southern China by sea routes.

Long before Hồ Chí Minh's arrival in Siam, a number of patriotic Vietnamese had already settled there to carry out their mission, and a number stayed on after his departure to fulfill their task. Some of them returned to Vietnam only in the beginning of the 1960s as Việt Kiều Hồi Hương, while others died in Thailand with no chance to go back to their homeland.

It is without a doubt that Hồ Chí Minh's instruction of his compatriots during his sojourn in Siam contributed tremendously to the struggle for Vietnamese independence. By the end of the 1920s, he had accomplished his objectives of reorganizing and strengthening the network, dispensing instruction to the Vietnamese patriotic and revolutionary movement in Siam, and participating in the founding of the communist party in the region, which was the task assigned to him by the Comintern.

Hồ Chí Minh's presence in Siam has been recalled through the Thai-Vietnamese Friendship Village and the memorial houses in northeastern Thailand. It is a reminder to the young Vietnamese generation of the sacrifice and contribution of Hồ Chí Minh and his compatriots to their country's independence. It also reminds Thai people that only unity and solidarity, a strong will, and a sense of sacrifice can build a strong nation.

It is hoped that this paper will contribute to studies of Hồ Chí Minh's revolutionary activities abroad, which is part of Vietnamese revolutionary history. Though information regarding his activities in Siam is lacking, what I have gathered in this paper enables us, to some degree, to trace his whereabouts and activities in Siam. It is expected that deeper research will yield more information on this subject.

Accepted: September 7, 2012

Bibliography

Bảo Tàng Hồ Chí Minh. 2011. *Hành Trình theo Chân Bác (1911–1941)* [The journey following Uncle Ho's footstep (1911–1941)]. Hà Nội: Nhà Xuất Bản Thanh Niên.

————. 2007. *Những Tên Gọi, Bí Danh, Bút Danh Của Chủ Tịch Hồ Chí Minh* [President Hồ Chí Minh's names, aliases, and pseudonyms]. Hà Nội: Nhà Xuất Bản Chính Trị Quốc Gia.

Brocheux, Pierre. 2007. *Ho Chi Minh*. New York: Cambridge University Press.

————. 2003. *Ho Chi Minh: Du révolutionnaire à l'icône* [Ho Chi Minh, from a revolutionary to an icon]. Paris: Éditions Payot & Rivages.

Chan Ansuchote. 1960. The Vietnamese Refugees in Thailand: A Case Study in Decision-Making. M.A. Thesis, Thammasat University.

Chao Phraya Thipakornwongse เจ้าพระยาทิพากรวงศ์. 1983. *Phra Rajaphongsawadan Krung Ratanakosin Rajakan Thi 1* พระราชพงศาวดารกรุงรัตนโกสินทร์ รัชกาลที่ 1 [The Ratanakosin royal annals of Rama I]. 5th edition. Bangkok: Khuru Sapha.

Duiker, William J. 2000. *Ho Chi Minh: A Life*. New York: Hyperion.

Figuères, Léo, ed. 1970. *Ho Chi Minh notre camarade: Souvenirs de militants Français* [Ho Chi Minh, our comrade: Remembrances of French militants]. Paris: Éditions Sociales.

Goscha, Christopher E. 1999. *Thailand and the Southeast Asian Networks of the Vietnamese Revolution (1885–1954)*. London: Curzon Press.

Hau, Caroline S.; and Kasian Tejapira, eds. 2011. *Travelling Nation-Makers: Transnational Flows and Movements in the Making of Modern Southeast Asia*. Singapore: NUS Press; Kyoto: Kyoto University Press.

Ho Chi Minh. 1988. Hanoi: Éditions en Langues Etrangères.

Hồ Chí Minh Toàn Tập, Vol. 3: *1930–1945* [Hồ Chí Minh full collection, Vol. 3: 1930–1945]. 2nd edition. 2000. Hà Nội: Nhà Xuất Bản Chính Trị Quốc Gia, Xuất Bản.

Hoàng Văn Hoan. 1988. *A Drop in the Ocean: Hoang Van Hoan's Revolutionary Reminiscences*. Beijing: Foreign Languages Press.

————. 1986. *Giọt Nước trong Biển Cả (Hồi Ký Cách Mạng)* [A Drop in the ocean: Hoàng Văn Hoan's revolutionary reminiscences]. Beijing: Foreign Languages Press.

Lê Mạnh Trinh. 1975. *Hồi Ký Cách Mạng* [Revolutionary reminiscences]. Hà Nội: Tư Liệu Lưu Trữ Viện Nghiên Cứu Đông Nam Á (bản đánh máy).

————. 1961. *Cuộc Vận Động Cứu Quốc Của Việt kiều ở Thái Lan* [The patriotic mobilization of the overseas Vietnamese in Thailand]. Hà Nội: Nhà Xuất Bản Sự Thật.

Nghiêm Đình Vì. 2001. *Bác Hồ ở Thái Lan* [Uncle Hồ in Thailand]. Paper presented at conference on "25 Years of Thailand-Vietnam Relationship," Institute of Asian Studies, Chulalongkorn University, Bangkok.

Nguyễn Tài. 1965a. Mấy Mẫu Chuyện về Cụ Đặng Thúc Hứa [Some stories about grandfather Đặng Thúc Hứa]. *Tạp chí Nghiên cứu Lịch sử* [Journal of historian research] 79 (Oct.): 26–40.

————. 1965b. Mấy Mẫu Chuyện về Cụ Đặng Thúc Hứa. [Some stories about grandfather Đặng Thúc Hứa]. *Tạp chí Nghiên cứu Lịch sử* [Journal of historian research] 80 (Nov.): 40–46.

Onimaru, Takeshi. 2011. Living "Underground" in Shanghai: Noulens and the Shanghai Comintern Network. In *Travelling Nation-Makers: Transnational Flows and Movements in the Making of Modern Southeast Asia*, edited by Caroline S. Hau and Kasian Tejapira, pp. 96–125. Singapore: NUS Press; Kyoto: Kyoto University Press.

Quinn-Judge, Sophie. 2002. *Ho Chi Minh: The Missing Years*. California: University of California Press.

Sơn Tùng. 1993. *Con Người và Con Đường* [People and pathways]. Hà Nội: Nhà Xuất Bản Văn Hóa-Thông Tin.

Sukpreeda Bhanomyong สุขปรีดา พนมยงค์. 2006. *Ho Chi Minh: Thepphachao Phu Yang Mee Lomhaijai* โฮจิมินห์ เทพเจ้าผู้ยังมีลมหายใจ [Ho Chi Minh: A living legend]. Bangkok: Mingmitre Publishing house.

T. Lan. 1976. *Vừa Đi Đường Vừa Kể Chuyện* [Walking and talking]. Hà Nội: Nhà Xuất Bản Sự Thật.

Thanyathip Sripana. 2005. The Vietnamese in Thailand Who Returned to Their Homeland. *Journal of Science* 4E: 83–94.

————. 2004a. The Vietnamese in Thailand: A Cultural Bridge in Thai-Vietnamese Relationship. Paper presented at the 2nd International Conference on Vietnamese Studies, Ho Chi Minh City, July, 14–16.

————. 2004b. Cộng Đồng Người Việt Nam ở Đông Bắc Thái Lan [Vietnamese community in Northeast Thailand]. *Tạp chí Nghiên cứu Đông Nam Á* [Journal of Southeast Asian studies] 4(67): 68–73.

————. 2003. Bao Giờ Mới Được Nhập Quốc Tịch Thái Lan? [When will they be granted Thai citizenship?] *Tạp chí Nghiên cứu Đông Nam Á* [Journal of Southeast Asian studies] 4(61): 80–84.

————. 2001. 25 Năm Thiết Lập Quan Hệ Ngoại Giao Thái Lan [25 years of Thai-Vietnamese relationship]. *Tạp chí Nghiên cứu Đông Nam Á* [Journal of Southeast Asian studies] 6(51): 77–79.

Thanyathip Sripana ธัญญาทิพย์ ศรีพนา; and Trịnh Diệu Thìn. 2005. *Viet Kieu Nai Prathet Thai Kab Khwam Samphan Thai-Vietnam* เหวียตเกี่ยวในประเทศไทยกับความสัมพันธ์ไทยเวียดนาม [Viet Kieu in Thailand in

Thai-Vietnamese relationship]. Bangkok: Sriboon Computer and Publishing.
Trần Đình Lưu (Trần Đình Riên). 2004. *Việt Kiều Lào-Thái với Quê Hương* [Lao-Thai overseas Vietnamese and their homeland]. Hà Nội: Nhà Xuất Bản Chính Trị Quốc Gia.
Trần Dương. 2009. *Cuộc Hành Trình Của Bác Hồ Trên Đất Thái Lan* [The journey of Uncle Hồ in Thailand]. Hà Nội: Nhà Xuất Bản Văn Hóa-Thông Tin.
Trần Ngọc Danh (Biên soạn). 1999. *Bác Hồ ở Thái Lan* [Uncle Hồ in Thailand]. Thành Phố Hồ Chí Minh: Nhà Xuất Bản Trẻ.

Visualizing the Evolution of the Sukhothai Buddha

Sawitree Wisetchat*

As Buddhism spread from India to cover much of Asia, sculptures depicting the Buddha varied regionally, reflecting both the original Indian iconography and local ethnic and cultural influences. This study considers how statues of the Buddha evolved in Thailand, focusing on the Sukhothai period (1238–1438 CE), during which a distinctly Thai style developed; this style is still characteristic of Thailand today. The Sukhothai style primarily reflects features of the Pala, Sri Lankan, Pagan, and Lan Na styles, yet contains new stylistic innovations and a refinement over the four successive schools that were subsequently lost in later Thai Buddhist styles. To analyze this evolution, first a conventional "visual vocabulary" approach is used, wherein 12 styles (precursors, contemporaries, and successors of the Sukhothai style) are described and summarized in a style matrix that highlights commonalities and differences. Then a novel application of digital "blend-shape animation" is adopted to assist in the visualization of differing styles and to better illustrate style evolution. Rather than comparing styles by shifting attention between sample images, the viewer can now appreciate style differences by watching one style metamorphose into another. Common stylistic features remain relatively unchanged and visually ignored, while differing features draw attention. While applied here to the study of Buddhist sculptures, this technique has other potential applications to art history, architecture, and graphic design generally.

Keywords: Southeast Asia, Southeast Asian art, Sukhothai Buddha, sculptural style, visual vocabulary, style analysis, digital animation, blend shapes

Introduction

As Buddhism spread outward from India to cover much of Asia, both the teachings of Buddhism and the religious art evolved. The central artistic focus in traditional Buddhist practice is a statue that represents the Buddha, the historical figure of Siddhartha Gautama of the sixth to fifth century BCE. While Buddha sculptures follow common iconographic conventions (Rowland 1963, 12–14), the artistic style varies across regions and cultures,

* สาวิตรี วิเศษชาติ, The Glasgow School of Art: Digital Design Studio, 167 Renfrew St, Glasgow G3 6RQ, UK
e-mail: sawitreedesigns@gmail.com

Fig. 1 Sukhothai-Style Buddha Statue, Fourteenth–Fifteenth Century, at National Museum, Bangkok

reflecting the local artistic interpretation of this iconography (Leidy 2008). This paper focuses on the evolution of the Buddha statue in the Sukhothai period (1238–1438 CE), during which a distinct style developed; this style is still characteristic of Thailand today (see Fig. 1). This style was not the first, nor the last, distinctly Thai artistic style, but it remains the most important: "A remarkable image, which combines Thai ethnic features with yogic tranquility and inner power . . . in a unified blend of grace and abstraction" (Fisher 1993, 178).

Like organic forms that evolve over time, an artistic style can be viewed as undergoing an evolution from its precursors, with moments of innovation and periods of stability. Unlike living organisms that evolve from a single precursor organism, artistic style often evolves by blending multiple precursor styles. In a sense, the successor style has the opportunity to borrow features or traits selectively from multiple parents, along with incorporating new features.

Conventionally, artistic style is analyzed through a written discourse with reference to illustrations of representative examples (e.g., photographs or drawings of museum artifacts). Differing styles are then compared by a differential analysis. However, an appreciation for these differences requires the reader's visual imagination, and this is particularly challenging when analyzing style changes over time, wherein the reader must construct, from the chronological sequence of images, a sense for both the style and how it evolved.

In analyzing Buddha statues, it is conventional to start with the Buddhist iconogra-

phy that is conveyed by, for example, the pose of the hands; the direction of gaze; and traditional elements of the head and face, including the presence of an ushnisha, the design of the finial (e.g., a lotus blossom or flame), the shape of the nose (e.g., a "hooked or hero's nose"), the hair ("small snail-like coils of hair"), and the shape and expression of the mouth (e.g., "warm and serene"). Such a "visual vocabulary" has been used to broadly distinguish Buddha styles across cultures, such as Subhadradis's (1991, 19) use of these phrases when comparing the Indian Pala style with the later Sukhothai style, or to make finer distinctions in the development of the Buddha style across periods within a given culture (see Galloway 2006, 198–204 regarding the Burmese).

When comparing two styles, it is common to supplement the written description with images, such as a photograph of a representative example of each style. The reader can then refer to these images, shifting gaze from one to the other to observe the prominent differences between the two. This task is not always easy, as the viewer must attend only to the differences in style and ignore differences in lighting, material composition, physical condition, size, camera perspective, and so forth. It would be preferable if all those irrelevant factors were removed and one could focus only on how the Buddha's form and style changed. The central objective of this research is to explore a technique that allows one to visualize shape change without such distractions. Rather than static illustrations of reference material, digital animation is used to convey style differences. With this method, a viewer can appreciate style differences between two objects, A and B, not by shifting gaze from A to B but by watching A *become* B.

As is traditional, this study begins with a written analysis using a conventional visual vocabulary. A determination of the stylistic features that were potentially contributed by each precursor style is assisted by organizing the descriptors in the form of a matrix of features versus styles. In combination with historical sources, some style features associated with the Sukhothai can be traced back to their origins in precursor styles. Other features can be presumed to be inventions of Sukhothai artists. The complex nature of art history, and the patchwork of borrowing versus invention, however, cannot be easily resolved. What becomes important, then, is visualizing the changes, as much of the stylistic difference is better appreciated visually than by words or tabulations.

Overview of Cultures and Artistic Influences on the Sukhothai Style

Ancient kingdoms and empires each had a region of influence or power centered in a city (Kulke 1990; Thongchai 1994). The geographical arrangement of these city-states is an important starting point to understanding the Sukhothai Kingdom and the neighbors

that influenced it. In addition to political power, there were foreign influences from trade from about the first century CE onward, which brought religions, culture, and artifacts to the indigenous people of the region (Van Beek and Tettoni 1991, 51; Gutman 2002, 38). The trade was either across sea and land from west to east, primarily from India through Burma to Thailand (Gosling 2004, 48), or along the coastlines and up the rivers. Indigenous peoples included the western-central Mon, who spread south down the Malay Peninsula and up the Chao Phraya River valley; the northern Tai, who derived from Chinese migrations from Yunnan Province; and the eastern Khmer (Wyatt 2003). In terms of political and religious influences in the region of Sukhothai prior to the beginning of the kingdom, the first foreign influences were extremely early, such as the influence of the Mahayana culture of the Indian Gupta Empire (320–550 CE) on the Dvaravati (Nandana 1999, 19; Gosling 2004, 68). While Hinduism and Islam largely replaced Buddhism in India, Buddhism spread rapidly outside of India, and Gupta-style Buddha statues with highly abstract and simplified forms were important in conveying the spiritual message (Fisher 1993, 55–56). Theravada Buddhism spread primarily from the north and west, while Mahayana Buddhism and Hinduism spread from the south and east (Van Beek and Tettoni 1991, 51; Nandana 1999, 19–24). Along with the Buddhist religion and iconography, Sanskrit writing was also incorporated in subsequent centuries by the art and religion of the various Dvaravati city-states and Khmer kingdoms (Brown 1996, 37). Buddhism also spread from Sri Lanka from as early as the fourth century CE across Southeast Asia, especially to present-day Burma (Gutman 2002, 36). It is particularly difficult to separate the Sri Lankan contribution, because the monks who spread Theravada Buddhism traveled broadly for centuries and influenced not only the people across much of Thailand (except the far eastern regions that were under the influence of the Khmer and Mahayana Buddhism) but also inhabitants of Burma before the Pagan Empire (1050–1287 CE) (*ibid.*). Buddhist monks from lower Burma were also in contact with Haripunchai (*ibid.*, 38), a Mon center in present-day Lamphun, Thailand.

The Sukhothai Kingdom was centered in the city of Sukhothai, in north central Thailand. To the northwest was the Lan Na Kingdom (1281–1774), centered initially in Chiang Saen and subsequently in Chiang Mai, a separate city-state established by King Mangrai the Great (1239–1311 CE) with the conquering of the Haripunchai (Lamphun). The Lan Na Kingdom was bordered on the west by the Pagan Kingdom (Burma). South of the Sukhothai Kingdom were the Dvaravati principalities centered in U-Thong, Lopburi, and Nakhon Pathom. The Dvaravati, who were primarily Mon, practiced Theravada Buddhism. Artistically they displayed early Gupta influences (Gosling 2004, 56, 68) and then adopted the Khmer style as they increasingly came under the influence of the Khmer Empire by the tenth century and were finally conquered in the late twelfth

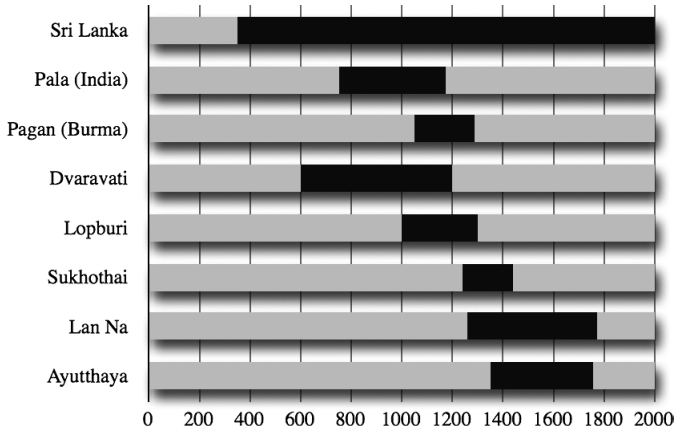


Fig. 2 Culture Time Line

Note: The Sukhothai Kingdom (1238–1438 CE) received Buddhist influences from Sri Lanka, India, Burma, and the contemporary Lan Na Kingdom. The Khmer-dominated Dvaravati cultures were geographically near the Sukhothai but less influential. The Sukhothai influenced the Lan Na and Ayutthaya cultures.

century (Van Beek and Tettoni 1991, 64; Woodward 1997, 76). The Khmer style continued to persist in Lopburi and surrounding regions well into the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries as the U-Thong style (Woodward 1997, 124).

The city of Sukhothai was originally under Khmer influence, but it became independent in 1238 to form the Sukhothai Kingdom. When the Sukhothai Kingdom became independent, it was at the boundary between two very distinct cultures, the Khmer to the east and south, and the Dvaravati and Tai to the west and north. The Sukhothai Kingdom became allied with its neighbors to the northwest (particular the Lan Na Kingdom) and fought with its Khmer-influenced neighbors to the southeast (Wyatt 2003; Stratton and Scott 2004, 138–140). It grew into a broad band extending from the far northeast (near Laos) down to the Malay Peninsula. While they fought with the Pagan Empire to the north, the Sukhothai were followers of Theravada Buddhism and were closer culturally to the Pagan Empire than to the Khmer cultures of Hinduism and Mahayana Buddhism.

The time line in Fig. 2 shows that, at least chronologically, the potential cultural influences on Sukhothai art include Pala, Sri Lankan, Dvaravati, Lopburi, Pagan, and the neighboring Lan Na. Since the capital of the Sukhothai Kingdom was a city that had a long history of Khmer influence, one might expect Sukhothai art to reflect its Dvaravati or Khmer background. In fact, however, when the kingdom became independent, it shifted away from the Khmer style and adopted cultural influences from Sri Lanka

(Woodward 1997, 146–149) as well as the early Lan Na Kingdom (*ibid.*, 207–210) and, indirectly, the Pagan Empire. A later, more direct, Burmese influence has also been traced to fourteenth-century visits by Sukhothai monks (Gutman 2002, 40). The Lan Na influence continued throughout the Sukhothai period: "During the 13th and 14th centuries AD, there occurred significant artistic interaction between Lan Na and Sukhothai, although the exact nature of this interaction has yet to be studied" (Van Beek and Tettoni 1991, 133). The Sukhothai style reached the apex of its glory during the second quarter of the fourteenth century through to the end of the kingdom in 1438, when Sukhothai was incorporated into the kingdom of Ayutthaya (Woodward 1997, 145).

Primary Buddhist Sculptural Styles

The cultures that predate and were potentially influential on the Sukhothai style were the Indian Pala, Sri Lankan, Burmese Pagan, and Lan Na. Figs. 3a–d show that while they share some common style aspects, their distinctive features may have contributed to the Sukhothai style, while the features presented by the Dvaravati style (Fig. 3e) had less in common with the Sukhothai (Fig. 1). It is important to note, however, that rather than a single school of style, there were four schools (General Group, Wat Trakuan, Kamphaengpet, and the Phra Phutta Chinnarat Group), each with its own distinct characteristics, during the Sukhothai period (Fig. 10). Subsequent to the Sukhothai era, the highly refined Sukhothai style was largely replaced by the U-Thong and Ayutthaya styles, which suggest a return to the Khmer style more than a continuation of the Sukhothai style. Artists who followed any one school of style created variations within it; hence, it is not possible to make absolute distinctions between any two styles. Nonetheless, it

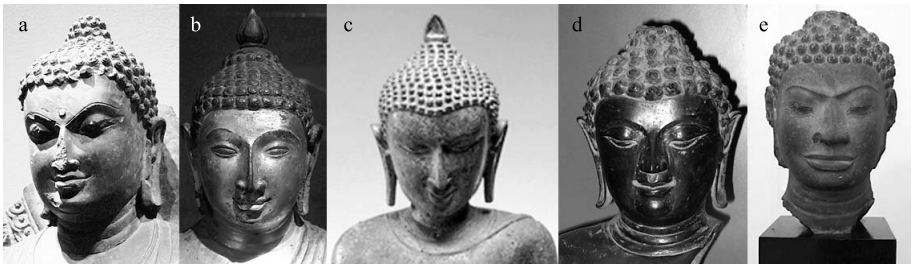


Fig. 3 Examples of Precursor Styles

a: Pala, b: Sri Lankan, c: Pagan, and d: Lan Na. The Dvaravati style in (e), with strong Khmer influences, however, was not incorporated into the Sukhothai style. (a–c) at Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York, (d) at Ramkhamhaeng National Museum, and (e) at National Museum, Bangkok.

will become clear that a systematic visual vocabulary can help distinguish the features that comprise a given style, given a few representative examples of each.

Description of Buddhist Sculptures

The Buddha is believed to have exhibited the physical characteristics of a great man. A listing of characteristics is described in the ancient writings of the *Digha Nikaya*, or "Collection of Long Discourses," part of the Pali Canon or Tipitaka scriptures of Theravada Buddhism (Shaw 2006, 114). The texts were known to Sri Lankan as well as Burmese monks and influenced Buddhist imagery and the early Thai aesthetic, especially the features of the Sukhothai style (Woodward 1997, 24, 25, 148) as early as the fifth century CE (Galloway 2002, 46). Among the many physical characteristics attributed to the Buddha, a few are relevant to the face: curled, untangled hair; a topknot or ushnisha (Krishan 1996, 111), as if crowned with a flower garland; a rounded forehead; large eyebrows arched like a bow; long earlobes; a nose like a parrot's beak; a chin like a mango stone; and a beautiful smile (Rowland 1963, 12–14; Subhadradis 1991, 19; Van Beek and Tettoni 1991, 26–27; Fisher 1993, 178; Stratton and Scott 2004, 47).

These and other descriptions of ideal form have been influential in Buddhist art since the Gupta period in India, but many variations can be found in specific styles. The iconographic features are present in some, but not all, subsequent Buddhist sculptural styles. For instance, the "nose like a parrot's beak" applies to the Sukhothai style but not to the U-Thong and Dvaravati styles. With the founding of Sukhothai in the mid-thirteenth century, a style emerges that is uniquely Thai (Stratton and Scott 1981, 67; Van Beek and Tettoni 1991, 7). Arthur Griswold (1953) regards the Sukhothai as "reshaped in accordance with their recollection of other things," including the descriptions from the Pali texts. Some sculptures show the eyes as downcast, and in others the eyes are opened and directed forward. The lips might form a smile or just assume a serene expression. Details of how the features were sculpted also vary. In some cases the eyebrows, lips, nose, and other facial features are depicted with natural amounts of curvature and relief, while in other cases the sculpting uses sharp creases and simplified, stylized curves. Many features of the statues in combination create a subtle impression of the gender of the statue. Buddha statues vary in the extent to which they appear masculine. Khmer and Dvaravati styles, for instance, have clearly powerful, masculine features, while the Sukhothai style is androgynous. An androgynous depiction of the Buddha de-emphasizes the male gender of the historic Buddha (Stratton and Scott 2004, 51, 138, 167, 337).

Analysis of Buddha Styles

This section provides an analysis of the Buddha styles considered in this study, using a visual vocabulary derived primarily from classical texts and modern descriptions (Sawitree 2011).

Pala Style

Fig. 4 shows four examples of the Pala style of Mahayana Buddhist statues. The eyebrows are a very important characteristic, with strongly sculpted double contours merged across the bridge of the nose. The crisp lines of the eyebrows are etched into the otherwise flat forehead. The overall facial proportions are broad, with moderately to distinctly masculine square jaws. The nose and chin are generally realistically depicted. A suggestion of a well-fed double chin is provided by lines around the neck. The lips are fleshy and vary from realistic to moderately sculpted, with outlined contours. The hair is

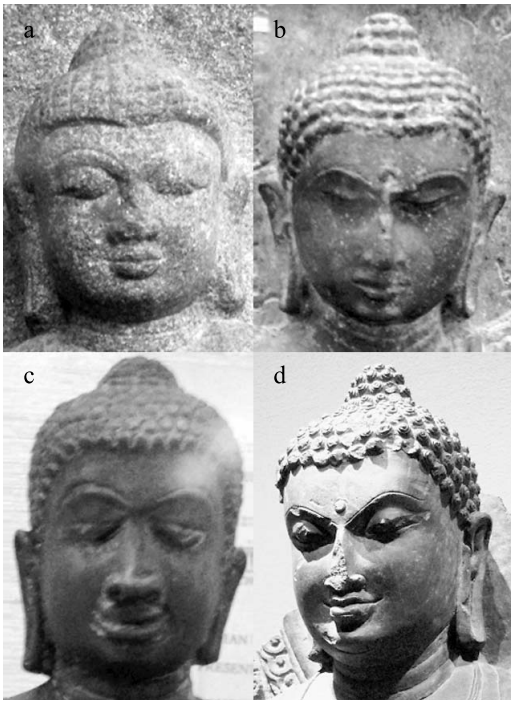


Fig. 4 Pala Style

a–c: from Bodhgaya, India, ninth century, at National Museum, Bangkok. d: from Bihar, India, eleventh century, at Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York.

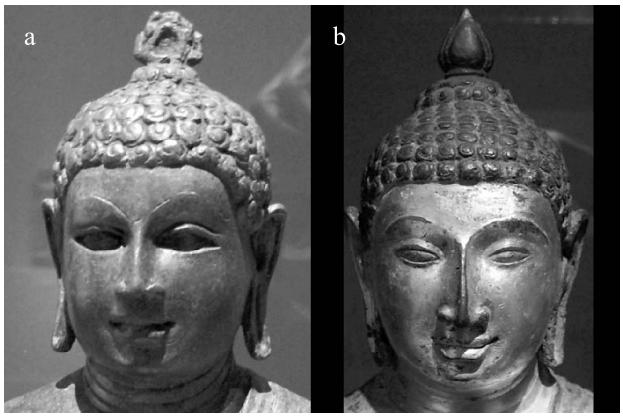


Fig. 5 Sri Lankan Style
a: late Anuradhapura period, 750–850 CE. b: Buddha offering protection, Sri Lanka, central plateau, late Anuradhapura-Polonnaruva period, tenth century. Both at Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York.

depicted in neat rows of moderate to large coils. The hairline shows little evidence of a widow's peak. The eyes are generally cast downward, not directed forward.

Sri Lankan Style

Two examples of the Sri Lankan style from the eighth to the tenth centuries are shown in Fig. 5. The Sri Lankan sculptures differ significantly from the Pala style in many respects. The topknot or ushnisha is often less prominent, but elaborate finials of various designs are added. The coils of hair vary from moderate to large, with generally more distinct details. The Sri Lankan statues usually have a rounder face, and a longer and narrower nose with a sharp ridge. Like in the Pala style, the Sri Lankan forehead is narrow to moderately wide with only a suggestion of a widow's peak. Unlike the prominent double curve of the Pala eyebrow, the Sri Lankan eyebrows vary from only faintly outlined to sharply creased, and rather than terminate at the bridge of the nose, the curves sometimes merge smoothly with, and continue down, the long central ridge of the nose. The gaze of the eyes is frequently directed outward, not downward. The mouths vary from small to broad, with realistically sculpted lips. These Sri Lankan sculptures suggest a stylistic innovation that would appear in the later Sukhothai style, particularly in the contouring of the eyebrows and nose.

Pagan Style

While Pala, India, is regarded as the "principal stylistic source" for the Pagan style of Buddha statues (Stadtner 1999, 54), by the eleventh century the Pagan Kingdom had

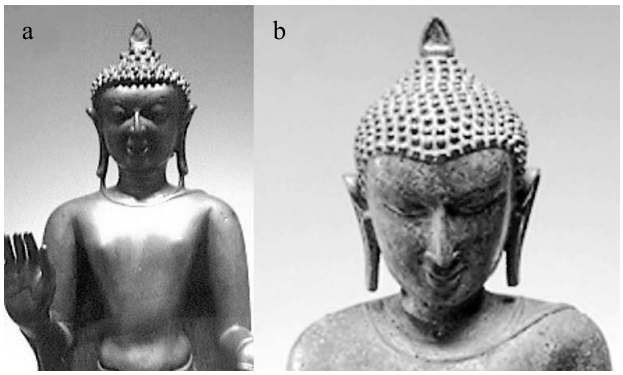


Fig. 6 Pagan Style
a: twelfth century, from *New World Encyclopedia* (2011). b: twelfth–thirteenth century, from Metropolitan Museum of Art (2011).

developed its own distinct style; and by the end of the thirteenth century the Indian influence was "all but lost" (*ibid.*, 58), with heads becoming more massive and disappearing into the torso. The depiction of the hair, in terms of the coils and the relative absence of a widow's peak, remained similar to the Pala style. However, the deeply etched double contour of the eyebrows was gradually lost and the shape of the face changed from "sub-rectangular" to more triangular (Blurton 2002, 56), with a less masculine jaw line, a softer chin, and a diminished mouth, all realistically sculpted rather than sharply stylized (Bautze-Picron 2006, 37–39). More generally, the earlier Mahayana influence was largely ignored; the art evolved from Theravada iconography (Stadtner 1999, 58; Galloway 2006, 1–3, 198–200). Compared to the Sri Lankan faces, while both are rounded overall, the foreheads of the Pagan statues are broader and more prominent due to the reduced mouth and chin. The eyes of Pagan-style sculptures have a more obviously downward gaze (Galloway 2006, 200); and with small, pursed lips and an overall modest demeanor, the Pagan style evolved toward a warm and serene smiling face.

Dvaravati Style

Fig. 7 shows four examples of the distinctive Dvaravati style, which, of all Thai sculptures, most directly exhibits the early Indian influence (Gosling 2004, 66). While it displays some commonality with the Pala, it is regarded as deriving from the earlier fifth-century Gupta style. The faces of the Dvaravati images are less stylized, gentler, more approachable, and realistic (*ibid.*, 68). A finial, if present, is small and cap-like, and the coils of hair are prominent and large. The Dvaravati Buddha's face is overall broad, rather than elongated, with a masculine square jaw (more similar to Pala than Sri Lankan and Pagan),

Fig. 7 Dvaravati Style
a–c: Nakhon Pathom, Thailand, seventh–ninth century, at National Museum, Bangkok. d: eighth century, at Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York.

and more muscular than plump. The forehead is short (measured from eyebrows to hairline) and wide (measured from left to right), and dominated by perhaps the most distinctive feature of the Dvaravati style: strongly sculpted and delineated eyebrows that meet at the bridge of the nose and often define a continuous curve across the forehead. The ears have very heavy earlobes. The upper eyelids are heavy and blend smoothly and realistically into the eyebrows without a sculpted crease. The eyes are usually downcast. The nose is generally broad with a straight profile. In some statues the sharp ridge of the nose and broad continuous eyebrows form a "T" shape. The lips are large and full, and the mouth is expressive and sometimes gently smiling, all consistent with the Khmer cultural influence in this region. The chin is featureless, without the suggestion of a double chin.

Lopburi Style

The Khmer-influenced Lopburi style, also from current-day Thailand, shares some features of the Dvaravati style. While the overall facial proportions are somewhat more elongated, the depiction represents a similarly trim Buddha. It also shares the broad, full lips of the Dvaravati style, including the use of an inscribed outline for emphasis, but

Fig. 8 Lopburi Style
a–c: Lopburi, Thailand, thirteenth century. d: Khmer art, twelfth century. All at National Museum, Bangkok.

overall it has the more naturalistic and softly rounded sculpting of the Pagan style. The eyebrows, nose, eyes, and chin are generally very realistically depicted with only slight sculptural details. The Lopburi faces often show individual and expressive character (Woodward 1997, 114–115).

Significantly, the eyebrows have low arches and do not create a strong sculpted contour above the eyes. The eyebrows do not cross the bridge of the nose (as in some Pala and Dvaravati artifacts, Figs. 4 and 7), nor do they follow down the ridge of the nose (as in some Sri Lankan examples, Fig. 5). Instead, they are quite natural and not stylized. The eye shapes resemble some Sri Lankan examples. Except for the simplification of the eyelids and the double contour that outlines the lips, the proportions and curves of the Lopburi style are realistic. The depiction of the hair is also quite different, with a cap often replacing the coils of hair (*ibid.*, 86).

Lan Na Style

The Mon Hariphunchai (Lamphun), conquered by the Lan Na Kingdom in 1282, was the primary source for the earliest Lan Na sculpture, embodying a mix of Pala, Pagan, Mon, and even Khmer influences (Stratton and Scott 2004, 134). During the late thirteenth

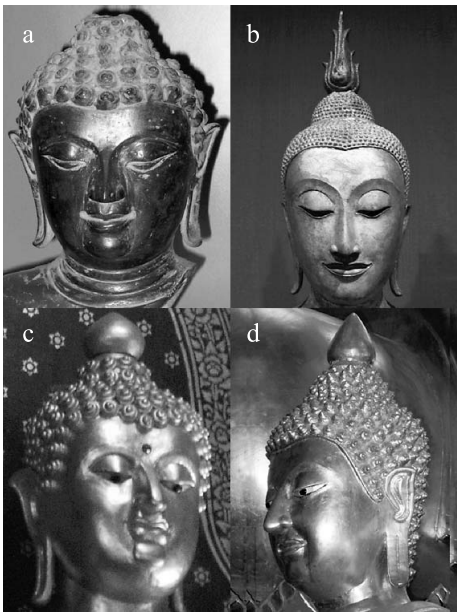


Fig. 9 Lan Na Style
a: fourteenth–fifteenth century, at Wat Chedi Chet Thaeo, Sukhothai, Thailand. b: fifteenth century, at Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York. c–d: fifteenth century, at Wat Chet Yod, Chiang Mai, Thailand.

and early fourteenth centuries, the Lan Na style developed in close association with the Sukhothai, and both styles evolved away from the Mon aesthetic (Van Beek and Tettoni 1991, 133; Stratton and Scott 2004, 138). In the Lan Na style, a variety of finial shapes are added on top of a prominent ushnisha. The hair coils vary in size, and some hairlines in fifteenth-century statues suggest a widow's peak (Listopad 1999, 57). The fourteenth- to fifteenth-century examples (see Fig. 9) are generally rounder and depict a heavier Buddha, with a creased and dimpled double chin (like a "mango stone"), and not the trim, strongly masculine square jaw of many Pala and Lopburi sculptures. While some features are quite variable, such as the depiction of the hair and nose, other features such as the eyebrows and eyelids are more consistent and exhibit the Sri Lankan style of sharply contoured eyebrows, eyebrows that merge with the bridge of the nose, and creases between the eyelid and eyebrow that follow the arch of the eyebrow (see especially Fig. 9b). The eyes are usually downcast. Curiously, the ears are often pointed, perhaps an influence from Laos (Stratton and Scott 2004, 51). The most distinctive aspects of the Lan Na style, including the highly arched eyebrows, eyelids with arched creases, and sharp, narrow noses, resemble some Sri Lankan examples and are also found in the Sukhothai style, which is elaborated upon next.

Sukhothai Style

Four styles or schools are associated with the Sukhothai. These are the General Group, the Wat Trakuan, the Kamphaengpet, and the Phra Phutta Chinnarat (see Fig. 10). As a whole, the four schools share many common style features.

The General Group can be used as the basis for comparison with the other schools. The statues in the General Group and Kamphaengpet schools share the softly rounded, elongated faces of some examples from Sri Lanka, but many are more slender and graceful. There is variability in details such as the type of the finial, if present, but otherwise they share an immediately recognizable style. The Wat Trakuan Group shows variability within the group, while the subsequent Phra Phutta Chinnarat school is again quite consistent internally. The eyebrows in all four schools are highly arched with a sharply creased, sculpted curve that continues down the ridge of the nose (much as in the Sri Lankan examples in Fig. 5). The nose is generally hooked, or a "hero's" nose, which is particularly parrot-like in some cases where the ridge is very sharp and narrow. The eyes are delicately curved and stylized, with re-curved upper eyelids and a sharp crease between the eyelid and the eyebrow. The eyes are downcast and slightly open. The lips, cheeks, and chin are generally lean and slender. Some Wat Trakuan school statues are less slender and have finial, hair coil, and hairline details in common with the earlier Pala and Dvaravati styles. This school shows some variability in the size of the hair coils, the type of finial, and the sharpness of the nose ridge; and while some statues are slender, others have a double chin, chubby cheeks, and a less elongated face overall.

The Sukhothai style is perhaps most distinctive in those examples where the face is lean and elongated and suggests effeminate form due to the delicate and graceful curves

Fig. 10 Sukhothai Style

a: General Group, late thirteenth–fourteenth century, at Ramkhamhaeng National Museum, Sukhothai. b: Wat Trakuan, late thirteenth century, at Ramkhamhaeng National Museum, Sukhothai. c: Kamphaengpet, fourteenth–fifteenth century, at National Museum, Bangkok. d: Phra Phutta Chinnarat, fourteenth–fifteenth century, at Wat Phra Si Ratana Mahathat.

(Van Beek and Tettoni 1991, 114). These features are present in most statues of the General Group, and perhaps the style is most refined in the Kamphaengpet school, with detailed hair coils and finials. In contrast, statues from the last Sukhothai school, the Phra Phutta Chinnarat school, appear plump and well fed and more masculine. The facial proportions are less elongated, and the cheeks and chin are fleshier, with a rounded double chin, a cleft chin, and folds on the neck. The hairline is often lower and has a more prominent widow's peak. Despite these differences, the Phra Phutta Chinnarat school shows the distinctive Sukhothai style of elaborate finials, sharply creased contours in the eyes and eyelids, and the way the eyebrows continue down the ridge of the nose.

U-Thong Style

Two successor styles, U-Thong and early Ayutthaya, are examined to see the influence that the Sukhothai style might have had on them. The U-Thong statues in Fig. 11 are distinctly different from the Sukhothai style in many ways. While there is considerable variation within the style, a few features are consistently different. The finial varies from an elaborate flame to being apparently absent altogether. The hair coils are much smaller than most of the Sukhothai examples (similar to the Kamphaengpet, but sometimes even finer). There is also a band that follows the hairline, which is a new addition. The robust facial proportions, broad full lips and jaws, and general feeling of masculinity and strength are similar to the Khmer-influenced Dvaravati and Lopburi styles. Within the style, there is variability in the sculpting of the eyebrows, from being defined by curved lines to appearing to have realistic thickness and shape. The eyebrows vary from a high arch to nearly straight; they do not continue in a sculpted manner down the sides of the nose. Similarly, the eyelids vary from having a crease to smoothly blending up to the eyebrows. The nose is generally realistic and not sculpted with exaggerated contours.

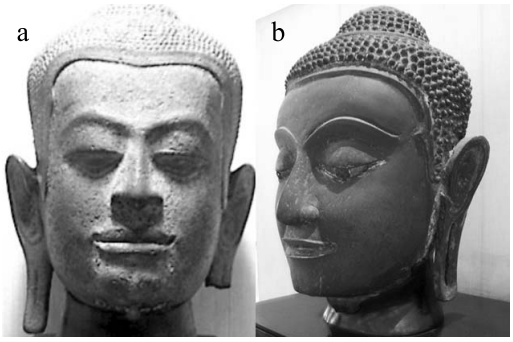


Fig. 11 U-Thong Style, Thirteenth–Fourteenth Century, at National Museum, Bangkok

Fig. 12 Ayutthaya Style
a: thirteenth–fourteenth century, b: sixteenth–eighteenth century, both at National Museum, Bangkok. c–d: fifteenth–eighteenth century, both at Ramkhamhaeng National Museum, Sukhothai.

Ayutthaya Style

The Ayutthaya style (Fig. 12) is also more variable than the Sukhothai style. Nonetheless, it was clearly influenced by the Sukhothai sculptures. While the traditional finial above a topknot of hair resembles the Sukhothai style, sometimes it is replaced with an elaborate headdress or crown also seen in some earlier Mahayana-style Buddhas from Pala, Pagan, Hariphunchai, and Lan Na (Stratton and Scott 2004, 57). Likewise, the sculpting of the eyes, eyebrows, nose, and mouth often shows a Sukhothai influence. However, Pagan and Khmer influences are also clearly present. The Ayutthaya sculptures do not represent a single clear school. Instead, they show contributions from many cultures beyond that of the Sukhothai and, like the U-Thong style, might appear to step back to earlier traditional style features while simultaneously introducing new ones.

Style Summary

The Pala, Sri Lankan, Pagan, and Lan Na styles of Buddha sculptures were important

precursors to the Sukhothai style. In contrast, the Khmer-influenced Dvaravati and Lopburi styles show little in common with the various schools of the Sukhothai. Upon closer inspection, some contributions of the precursor styles seem apparent. For example, the Sri Lankan style likely contributed largely to the eyes, eyebrows, and nose. Perhaps the Pagan influence contributed to the facial proportions, which were more elongated and slender than the Sri Lankan, Pala, or most of the Lan Na. It would be difficult to specify the origins of any single feature of the Sukhothai style with any degree of certainty, for not only were there centuries of trade and amalgamation of cultures prior to the formation of the Sukhothai Kingdom, but each neighboring culture was also assimilating the cultures of its neighbors. The practice of creating a sharp contour to the lips and eyelids shows up in several precursor styles, for instance. The origin of the Sukhothai style is certainly complex, and it will likely never be fully understood because of the lack of written records made at the time. Nonetheless, it is possible to compile a new picture of the manner in which some of the visual vocabulary of precursor styles may have added to what became the Sukhothai.

Most specialists concentrate on a particular style, such as Lan Na, or describe the various styles in shallower terms, across many centuries, cultures, and regions. It is beyond the scope of this work to address multiple styles in depth as well as breadth. The use of a style matrix, however, illustrates how an exhaustive study could proceed and the results be compiled.

Table 1 shows this compilation as a matrix, with four levels associated with a given cell based on samples of the different Buddha styles. According to the color code (see the key in Table 1), the darker the cell, the more important the feature to a given style. For this study only four distinctions are made, either "rarely, seldom, frequently, and usually" for a feature that is present or absent in a given statue, or "low, slight, medium, and high" for a property that varies more continuously, such as lip fullness, or a square versus rounded jaw. For features such as the arch to the eyebrows, the cell color signifies the feature's prominence or magnitude (from slight to high) over four steps. The features are in rows, and the styles across columns. The pattern values for different styles then show up as an arrangement of white, light gray, dark gray, and black cells in a column. With few exceptions, each Buddha style or school has so much variability within it (such as in Fig. 5 for the Sri Lankan style) that statistical methods would likely not be applicable, even if an exhaustive collection of sample statues were compiled from all available resources internationally, and a more quantitative scale created for each feature. The purpose of the matrix is not to measure differences across styles, but to help draw attention to where the differences lie. In Table 1, the eye is drawn to the large cluster of features that are held in common across the Sukhothai styles and shared,

Table 1 A Matrix of Style Features versus Buddha Styles, with Color Key

Feature	Feature Description	Pala	Sri Lanka	Pagan	Dvara-vati	Lopburi	Lan Na	Sukho-thai 1	Sukho-thai 2	Sukho-thai 3	Sukho-thai 4	U-Thong	Ayut-thaya
Finial	**flame/lotus blossom** vs. none												
Hair	**large hair coils** vs. small												
	widow's peak vs. smooth hairline												
Face	**elongated** vs. broad												
	tall forehead vs. short												
	rounded jaw vs. square												
	lean vs. plump												
Eyebrows	**sculpted** vs. realistic												
	high arch vs. low												
	continue down nose vs. across												
Ear	**sculpted/curled earlobes** vs. straight												
Eye	**eyelids re-curved** vs. straight												
	upper eyelid sharply creased vs. smooth												
	downcast (or closed) vs. direct gaze												
Nose	**hooked (hero's)** vs. straight profile												
	narrow ridge vs. broad (rounded)												
Mouth	**smiling** vs. neutral												
	small vs. wide mouth												
	thin vs. full lips												
	outlined (sculpted) vs. realistic												
Chin	**creased (outlined)** vs. smooth												
	cleft (dimpled) vs. smooth												

Color Code				
Frequency	rarely	seldom	frequently	usually
Magnitude	low	slight	medium	high

interestingly, with the Lan Na style but not with the earlier Khmer-influenced styles.

A table shows variations in features across styles in a way that is more illuminating and compact than reading a set of separate conventional written descriptions of each style, which typically rely on illustrations of examples. By visualizing a cluster of features that are present in one style and either shared with another or not, a tabulation is likely more efficient than a discourse.

While a matrix is a compact means to compare styles, it is not an effective means for visualizing the evolution of a style, nor is the conventional approach of describing change by textual descriptions. It is usually the responsibility of the reader to then consult images representative of the different styles and to visualize their differences by comparison. With a pair of images, one for each of two styles, this comparison requires detecting what is different and ignoring what is the same across the two examples. This study explores a far more effective means for directing visual attention to what is different between styles, and away from what the styles have in common.

The Sukhothai style is refined and elegant in ways that are not easily captured by written descriptions. Table 1 shows which features are predominantly found in the Sukhothai style and less so in the other styles, but does not hint at why the Sukhothai style is so striking. That is best *shown*, rather than described, and the method introduced in this study allows the qualities of the Sukhothai style to emerge by watching the other styles blend into the Sukhothai style.

Modeling and Visualization

This study presents a technique for visualizing a sculptural style, and changes in that style, by having a model "morph" or blend between two or more such styles. This method illustrates style through animation. It uses the human ability to notice visible change in order to draw attention to where two styles differ, and away from where they are similar. The viewer observes one model that blends continuously from one style to another, while the material, lighting, viewpoint, and other factors that do not relate to style are kept constant. In this way, many of the irrelevant differences between two separate artifacts do not distract from attending to their differences in style.

The digital technique of "blend animation" has been widely adopted for use in character animation (Deng and Noh 2008). The method produces a smooth surface from a relatively simple "cage" of vertices. An initial or "base" cage is constructed that will be used as the basis for variations on that shape (see Fig. 13). Multiple copies of that base cage are constructed that will be made to resemble the other shapes. Each variation

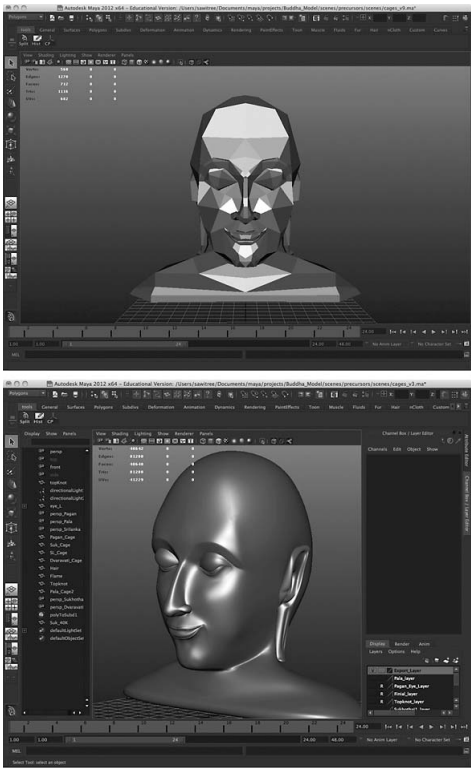


Fig. 13 Example of a Low-High Polygon Model in Maya

becomes a "target," i.e., another shape that the base shape can be deformed into without adding or removing detail, but just moving and reshaping the details that are originally present in the base shape. The target shapes can be made to appear different from the base shape only by having their vertices shifted or displaced in 3D space relative to counterparts in the original base shape. With a base shape and target shape, a "blend shape" can then interpolate between the two shapes to form a continuous and smooth transition from the base to the target (see Fig. 14).

The modeling of a given target shape is based on reference material. This reference can be photographs of museum artifacts that are placed in the 3D scene as "image planes." The 3D model is then sculpted to resemble the reference object from that photographed viewpoint. The use of image planes is only approximate, however, and many photographs would be needed to ensure that the object has been modeled well from all viewpoints.

The result is best thought of as a three-dimensional illustration and not a precise replica of any specific artifact, with care taken to not exaggerate the style nor omit essential features. By working from digital models that can morph or blend between styles,

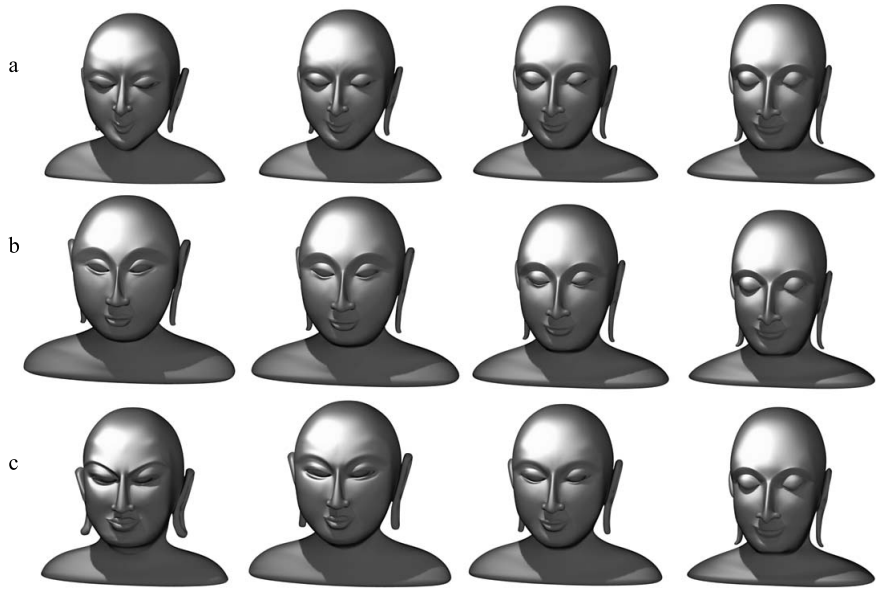


Fig. 14 Examples of Sequences of Animation
a: from Pagan to Sukhothai. b: from Sri Lankan to Sukhothai. c: from Pala to Sri Lankan to Pagan to Sukhothai.

we avoid the irrelevant issues in viewing actual artifacts either directly or in photographs, as mentioned earlier.

During the shape blends, the differences between the two styles draw one's attention. For instance, if the nose changes from realistically rounded to highly sculpted and contoured, that instantly reveals an aspect in which the two styles differ significantly. Equally important, shared aspects of the two styles remain essentially unchanged and unnoticed. Blend animation reveals differences by change, and similarity by constancy. An effort is made to keep the essential proportions of the different sculptures similar, to minimize distraction by changes in overall size and shape, so that while the blending animation proceeds the viewer may focus on the style differences. The animations are encoded as movies and sampled as still frames. This study demonstrates that blend shapes can indeed effectively demonstrate style differences and evolution, but the modeling process is open-ended. It is impractical to create too close a replica, and like technical illustration in 2D, there is an art to efficiently conveying the essence. Unlike 2D illustration, however, this technique adds not only a third dimension (depth) but also a fourth (time) to show differences and evolution of style.

Conclusion

The Sukhothai style of Buddha sculptures may be regarded as a refinement and idealization of Buddhist form that emphasizes graceful contours and a face that is androgynous and abstract, with highly sculpted features and an expression of peace and serenity.

When a visual vocabulary is used to compile descriptions of the various aspects of the Sukhothai style, in comparison to its precursor and successor styles, a matrix such as Table 1 reveals a pattern that is nearly unique to the Sukhothai and similar to only some Lan Na and Sri Lankan examples. It is possible to go beyond using words and tables, to actually see the Sukhothai style as it differs from these other styles. Conventionally, photographs or diagrams are presented to illustrate different styles, where the viewer attempts to abstract away the essence of the style by comparing alternatives. That is a difficult task, especially when the statues differ in composition and condition, the photographs show them from different viewpoints and lighting conditions, and so forth. It is important to remember that much is lost when viewing a simplified model compared to the original, but something new and valuable is also gained when that model can transform dynamically from one style into another. Without the distractions that come with viewing real artifacts, the abstract model captures the essence of the style itself. Changes in the model, as it blends, capture differences in styles. One can then return to observe the original artifacts with new appreciation.

Having one style blend into another also allows the viewer to appreciate subtle overall differences, such as the feeling that is evoked by a style. For instance, by blending from a very masculine and physically powerful face of the Pala style to the Sukhothai style, the Buddha is seen to transform into a delicate and more abstract form that has lost some of its individuality to be replaced with calm serenity and ideal form. The visual and emotional impact of the change is more apparent, it seems, when this comparison is watched as a blend animation than when it simply is presented with adjacent examples of the two. Thus, blend animation between styles can be used not only to compare style features, but also to feel the emotional impact as the sculpture changes its character in front of your eyes. This might in turn provide insights into the ideals and motivations of the artists and their cultures.

Accepted: August 20, 2012

References

Autodesk. 2011. Maya-3D Animation, Visual Effects & Compositing Software. Accessed September 4, 2011, http://usa.autodesk.com/maya/.

Bautze-Picron, Claudine. 2006. New Documents of Burmese Sculpture: Unpublished "Andagū" Images. *Indo-Asiatische Zeitschrift* 10: 32–47.

Blurton, T. Richard. 2002. Burmese Bronze Sculpture in the British Museum. In *Burma: Art and Archaeology*, edited by Alexandra Green and T. Richard Blurton, pp. 55–65. London: British Museum Press.

Brown, Robert L. 1996. *The Dvāravatī Wheels of Law and the Indianization of South East Asia*. Leiden: E. J. Brill.

Deng, Zhigang; and Noh, Junyong. 2008. Computer Facial Animation: A Survey. In *Data-Driven 3D Facial Animation*, edited by Zhigang Deng and Ulrich Neumann, pp. 1–28. London: Springer-Verlag.

Fisher, Robert E. 1993. *Buddhist Art and Architecture*. London: Thames and Hudson.

Galloway, Charlotte. 2006. Burmese Buddhist Imagery of the Early Pagan Period (1044–1113). PhD dissertation, Australian National University. Accessed August 5, 2012, https://digitalcollections.anu.edu.au/handle/1885/47078.

————. 2002. Relationships between Buddhist Texts and Images of the Enlightenment during the Early Pagan Period. In *Burma: Art and Archaeology*, edited by Alexandra Green and T. Richard Blurton, pp. 45–53. London: British Museum Press.

Gosling, Betty. 2004. *Origins of Thai Art*. Trumbull, CT: Weatherhill.

Griswold, Arthur B. 1953. The Buddhas of Sukhodaya. *Archives of the Chinese Art Society of America* 7: 5–41.

Gutman, Pamela. 2002. A Burma Origin for the Sukhothai Walking Buddha. In *Burma: Art and Archaeology*, edited by Alexandra Green and T. Richard Blurton, pp. 35–43. London: British Museum Press.

Krishan, Yuvraj. 1996. *The Buddha Image: Its Origins and Development*. New Delhi: Munshiram Manoharlal Publishers.

Kulke, Hermann. 1990. The Early and the Imperial Kingdom in Southeast Asian History. In *Southeast Asia in the 9th to 14th Centuries*, edited by David G. Marr and Anthony C. Milner, pp. 1–92. Singapore: Chong Moh Offset Printing.

Leidy, Denise Patry. 2008. *The Art of Buddhism: An Introduction to Its History and Meaning*. Boston: Shambhala Publications.

Listopad, John. 1999. Early Thai Sculpture Reappraised: Thirteenth–Sixteenth Century. In *Art from Thailand*, edited by Robert L. Brown, pp. 49–64. Mumbai: J. J. Bhabha.

Metropolitan Museum of Art. 2011. Standing Buddha [Burma]. Accessed September 4, 2011, http://www.metmuseum.org/toah/works-of-art/1993.235.1.

Nandana, Chutiwongs. 1999. Early Buddhist Sculpture of Thailand: Circa Sixth–Thirteenth Century. In *Art from Thailand*, edited by Robert L. Brown, pp. 19–33. Mumbai: J. J. Bhabha.

New World Encyclopedia. 2011. Image: PaganBuddha3. Accessed September 4, 2011, http://www.newworldencyclopedia.org/entry/Image:PaganBuddha3.JPG.

Rowland, Benjamin Jr. 1963. *The Evolution of the Buddha Image*. New York: Asia House Gallery/Harry N. Abrams.

Sakchai Saisingha. 2004. *Sukhothai Art: A View from Archaeological, Art and Epigraphic Evidence*. Bangkok: Silpakorn University Printing.

Sawitree Wisetchat. 2011. Sukhothai: The Evolution of a Distinctly Thai Sculptural Style. MPhil thesis, University of Glasgow, The Glasgow School of Art.

Shaw, Sarah. 2006. *Buddhist Meditation: An Anthology of Texts from the Pali Canon*. London and New

York: Routledge.

Stadtner, Donald M. 1999. Pagan Bronzes: Fresh Observations. In *The Art of Burma: New Studies*, edited by Donald M. Stadtner, pp. 53–64. Mumbai: Marg Publications.

Stratton, Carol; and Scott, Miriam M. 2004. *Buddhist Sculpture of Northern Thailand*. Chicago: Serindia Publications.

————. 1981. *The Art of Sukhothai: Thailand's Golden Age from the Mid-Thirteenth to the Mid-Fifteenth Centuries; A Cooperative Study*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Subhadradis Diskul. 1991. *Art in Thailand: A Brief History*. Bangkok: Amarin Printing Group.

Thongchai Winichakul. 1994. *Siam Mapped: A History of the Geo-Body of a Nation*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press.

Van Beek, Steve; and Tettoni, Luca I. 1991. *The Arts of Thailand*. Singapore: Ibis Books.

Von Schroeder, Ulrich. 1992. *The Golden Age of Sculpture in Sri Lanka*. Paris: Association Française d'Action Artistique.

Woodward, Hiram W. Jr. 1997. *The Sacred Sculpture of Thailand*. Bangkok: River Books.

Wyatt, David K. 2003. *Thailand: A Short History*. New Haven: Yale University Press.

RESEARCH REPORT

Farmers' Perceptions of *Imperata cylindrica* Infestation in a Slash-and-Burn Cultivation Area of Northern Lao PDR

Bounthanh Keoboualapha,* Suchint Simaraks,* Attachai Jintrawet,**
Thaworn Onpraphai,** and Anan Polthanee*

This paper discusses farmers' perceptions of *Imperata* infestation and its impact on agricultural land uses in a slash-and-burn area of Nambak District in Luang Prabang Province, northern Laos. Our study showed that slash-and-burn cultivation (SBC), which has been practiced for generations, remains the main agricultural land use system and provides an important source of food and income for farmers. *Imperata*, which first took root one and a half decades ago, is gradually proliferating, affecting the livelihoods of nearly 38% of households in the five target villages of this study. The positive cause-and-effect relationship among such factors as accelerated land clearing, young fallows, declining soil fertility, and land shortages—suggested to be the main cause of the *Imperata* infestation—has reduced not only cultivable land but also its productivity. According to the majority of farmers, the most significant problems caused by *Imperata* infestation are reduced crop yields, increased weeding, and reduced crop growth. To overcome the problems, farmers employ a combination of strategies—the most common being weeding, fallowing the land, applying chemicals, and exchanging labor. However, the implementation of these strategies is encumbered by many constraints, primarily lack of labor and capital, rice insufficiency, and limited land. Given the constraints and the available technologies, it will be very difficult for farmers in the study area to adopt a more permanent, diversified, and productive agricultural system, which is a high priority of government development policy in the uplands. To meet this challenge, the thrust of research and development communities working in the uplands should be on more systematic and integrated interventions that combine technological, social, economic, and political resolutions based on knowledge of the causes of *Imperata* infestation, the problems it creates, management strategies to cope with the infestation, and the specific constraints perceived by farmers.

Keywords: slash-and-burn cultivation, *Imperata* infestation, agricultural land uses

* ບຸນ ທັນ ແກ້ວ ບົວ ລະພາ; สุจินต์ สิมารักษ์; อนันต์ พลธานี, System Approaches in Agriculture Program, Faculty of Agriculture, Khon Kaen University, 123 Moo 16 Mittapap Rd., Nai-Muang, Muang District, Khon Kaen 40002, Thailand
Corresponding author (Bounthanh Keoboualapha)'s e-mail: k.bounthanh@gmail.com
** อรรถชัย จินตะเวช; ถาวร อ่อนประไพ, Crop Science and Natural Resources Department and Center for Agriculture Resource System Research, Faculty of Agriculture, Chiang Mai University, 239 Huay Kaew Road, Muang District, Chiang Mai 50200, Thailand

I Introduction

Slash-and-burn cultivation (SBC), also called shifting cultivation, is an important food production system widely practiced in the tropical mountainous regions of Southeast Asia (Rasul and Gopal 2003). SBC practices, which involve repeated cycles of slashing and burning of secondary forest or shrub vegetation, temporarily growing crops, and then letting the land revert to secondary forest growth or fallows, are similar throughout the region. In Laos, the SBC system is practiced in about 13% of the land by 39% of the total population (JICA 2001) and is viewed by the government as an unsustainable form of land use. It needs to be replaced with more permanent and productive land use systems.

The SBC system in Laos has been less and less productive in recent decades as a result of the reduction of fallow periods and the introduction of new species of weeds. Average fallow periods reported for the 1950s, 1970s, 1990s, and 2000s were 38, 20, 5, and 2–3 years respectively (Roder *et al.* 1997; Saito *et al.* 2006). Short fallow periods serve to increase weed infestation in upland rice (Roder *et al.* 1995), deteriorate soil fertility (Gourou 1942; Whitaker *et al.* 1972; Brown and Lugo 1990; Fujisaka 1991), and lead to a decline in non-timber forest products (NTFPs) (Foppes and Ketphanh 2005). The increase in population coupled with improper planning and implementation of upland development policies in many SBC areas has resulted in more land shortages and rural poverty (ADB 2001; Jones *et al.* 2005).

Imperata cylindrica is one of the most dominant, competitive, and difficult weeds to control in the humid and sub-humid tropics of Asia, West Africa, and Latin America. It is one of the most stubborn weeds in both SBC as well as intensive agriculture in West Africa (Chikoye *et al.* 1999; 2002). Lao upland farmers in the north perceive *Imperata* to be one of the most important weeds after *Ageratum conyzoides*, *Chromolaena odorata*, *Commelina* spp., *Panicum trichoides*, and *Lygodium flexuosum* and one of the most undesirable fallow species after *Cratoxylon prunifolium* and *Symplocos racemosa* in slash-and-burn rice systems (Roder *et al*. 1995; 1997). *Imperata* is also perceived as a key indicator of poor soil and land degradation (Saito *et al.* 2006; Lestrelin *et al.* 2010).

There may be as much as 57 million hectares of *Imperata* grassland in Asia, about 25 million hectares of which is in Southeast Asia. In Laos, *Imperata* was reported to have the potential to invade 0.8–1 million hectares (World Bank and Australian International Development Assistance Bureau 1989; Garrity *et al*. 1997), a figure that is expected to have increased in recent decades. There are primarily two reasons for this: shortened fallow periods, due to which the suppression of aggressive weeds such as *Imperata cylindrica* is less effective; and/or intensive use of short fallow lands for crop production where *Imperata* is still dominant.

Our study on the spatial distribution of *Imperata* grassland (characterized as a "micro-grassland") in northern Laos revealed that it was unevenly distributed throughout the study area (Fig. 1). In addition, the study found that increased land use intensification through diversifying SBC areas into more permanent crop production systems was strongly correlated with the spread of *Imperata* grassland (Keoboualapha *et al.* 2013). The purpose of this study was to capture the local perceptions of such infestation and its impacts on agriculture. The more specific objectives of the study were: (1) to characterize the main agricultural land uses and major crops in the most *Imperata*-infested area of Nambak District in Luang Prabang Province, northern Laos; (2) to estimate the extent of and describe *Imperata* infestation at the household level as perceived by affected farmers; and (3) to identify the existing strategies and constraints in dealing with *Imperata* infestation. The findings of this study will highlight the significance of *Imperata* grassland to concerned research and development communities as a crucial issue for sustainable development in the uplands of Laos.

II Materials and Methods

II-1 *Study Area*

The study area is located in the southeast part of Nambak District, about 100 kilometers northwest of the capital of Luang Prabang Province, occupying a total area of 72,200 hectares or 37% of the district's territory. This area (Zone 3 in Fig. 1) has been identified as the most *Imperata*-infested zone, with an average *Imperata* infestation level of 4.4%. It is characterized as an area of very intensive land use, a significant amount of shrub forest, and less natural and bush forests as compared to the other zones, i.e., Zones 1 and 2. Five villages in this zone were chosen for the household interviews (Fig. 1). The selection of the villages was based on the recommendation of the district Agriculture and Forestry Office.

II-2 *Household Sampling Method*

At the outset, an informal meeting was held with the village headmen and their committees to inform the villagers of the objectives of the study. At the meeting, the appropriate authority of each village was asked to differentiate its farmers into sets of those who had and did not have *Imperata* infestation on their farmland. All the lists with the names of farmers from the five villages whose fields were infested by *Imperata* were compiled into a single list comprising 278 households (Table 1); this list was, in turn, used for selecting households/farmers for individual interviews. A total of 100 from the 278

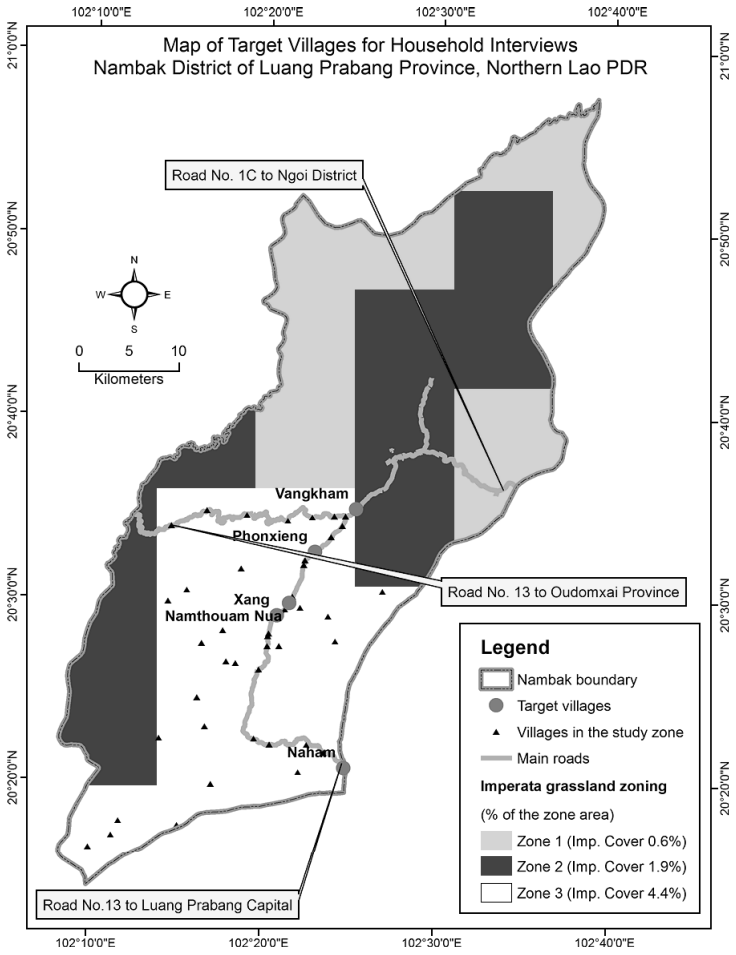


Fig. 1 Location of the Target Villages for Household Interviews

Table 1 Total Households in Target Villages and Total Households with *Imperata*-infested Land

Villages	Total Households	*Imperata*-infested Households	
		(No.)	(%)
1. Vangkham	86	57	66.3
2. Phonxieng	158	63	39.9
3. Namthouam Nua	362	61	16.9
4. Xang	271	68	25.1
5. Naham	70	29	41.4
Total	**947**	**278**	**–**
Average	**189**	**56**	**37.9**

households pooled were randomly selected with the help of a table of random numbers.

II-3 *Data Collection*

A structured questionnaire was developed for the individual farmer interviews. All the information that related to socioeconomic data, land uses, and *Imperata* infestation was collected for the wet season of 2011. Questionnaire pretesting exercises were conducted outside the five target villages to further fine-tune the data collection process. The actual interviews of 100 farmers were conducted after the pretesting.

II-4 *Data Analysis*

Microsoft Excel software was used as a tool for the data processing and statistical analyses. Descriptive statistics, including mean, frequency, and confidence level, were used to describe the important characteristics of the farmers with *Imperata* infestation within the study area. In addition, a semi-quantitative matrix ranking method (Ashby 1990) was used to rank the importance of *Imperata* infestation-related issues as reported by the farmers.

III Results and Discussion

III-1 *Socioeconomic Characteristics of Farmers with* Imperata-*Infested Land*

The sample statistics indicate that 89% of the farmers interviewed were less than 65 years old, with 80% between the ages of 35 and 64 (Fig. 2a). About 87% of the farmers had been living in their villages for less than 31 years and 13% for more than 30 years to a maximum of 50 years (Fig. 2b). The average family size was 5.7 persons. About 66% of families had between four and seven members (Fig. 2c). They mostly had low educational levels, with an average of 3.4 years in school. About 88% of the farmers had attended school for six years or less—among them, 18% had not been to school at all (Fig. 2d).

Most of the farmers interviewed (94%) had been farming for more than 10 years (Fig. 2e). They commonly had limited manual labor to help with farming activities: only about 89% of them had one or two full-time laborers (Fig. 2f).

About 58% of the farmers reported that they experienced a shortage of rice in 2011. It was common enough to purchase rice for three to four months a year. That year, however, the shortage was so severe that about 19% of the farmers had to buy rice for more than six months (Fig. 2g). It was observed that the farmers rarely relied on a single source of income to support their families but combined various sources. About

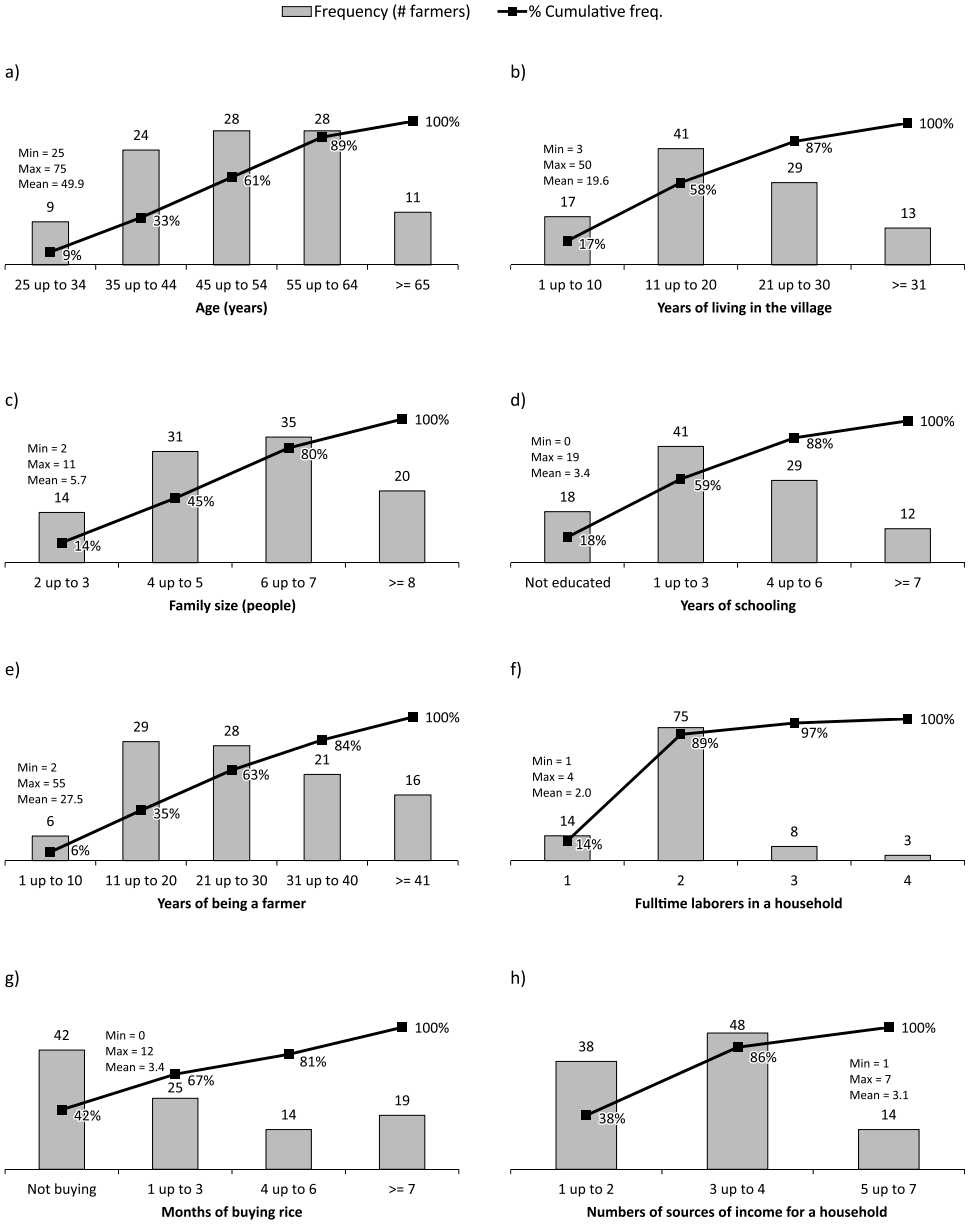


Fig. 2 Some Important Social and Economic Characteristics of the Farmers Interviewed ($n=100$)

Table 2 Main Sources of Income (n=100)

Income Sources	No. of Responses[a]	Rank[b]
Annual crops[c]	81	7.47 (1)
NTFPs[d]	51	6.59 (4)
Livestock[e]	44	7.05 (2)
Off-farm[f]	43	6.33 (5)
Perennial crops[g]	38	6.66 (3)
Loans	24	6.04 (6)
Remittances	22	5.82 (7)
Imperata grass	10	5.50 (8)

Notes: [a] Sum>n=100 because some farmers reported more than one source of income.
[b] Numbers outside the parentheses are the overall weights (relative frequency multiplied by ranking values given by a farmer, i.e., 0.8 is the most important and 0.1 the least important) for the corresponding income sources. Numbers in the parentheses represent overall ranking where the greater the overall weighting value the more important the income source.
[c] Mainly Job's tears (*Coix lacryma-jobi* L.), sesame (*Sesamum indicum* L.), upland rice, and maize (*Zea mays* L.)
[d] Non-timber forest products, e.g., tiger grass (*kiam*), bamboo shoots, paper mulberry, and medicinal plants
[e] Mainly pigs and poultry
[f] Wages, handicrafts, trading, weaving, and pensions
[g] Mainly teak, fruit trees, tiger grass (*kiam*), and galangal (*kha*)

62% of the farmers interviewed had income from more than two sources (Fig. 2h).

Annual crops were by far the most important source of income for most farmers in the study area, followed by livestock, perennial crops, NTFPs, and off-farm activities. NTFPs, although ranked fourth in the income scale, ranked second for a large number of farmers after upland annual crops. About 10% of the farmers said that *Imperata* grass also provided a source of income, but it was much lower down the scale when compared to other income sources (Table 2).

III-2 *Main Agricultural Land Uses and Major Crops*

Upland annual crop production, fallows, orchards, tree plantations, and paddy were identified as the main agricultural land uses adopted by farmers. SBC, which involves growing upland annual crops and fallowing the lands, was important not only for farmers who had no paddy but also for farmers who had paddy fields. In 2011, 27 of the 36 farmers who had paddy fields had upland annual crops occupying about 25% of their farmland (Table 3).

The sample statistics indicate that the average farm sizes were not significantly different, ranging from 2.87 to 2.97 hectares hh^{-1}. The average size of farms rated with a confidence level of 95% ranged between 2.48 and 3.26 hectares hh^{-1} and 2.53 and 3.42 hectares hh^{-1} for farmers with and without paddy fields, respectively. Upland annual

Table 3 Descriptive Statistics of the Main Agricultural Land Use Types[a]

Land Use Types[b]	No. of hh[c]	Average	Confidence Level of 95%		Total Area	
			Lower[d]	Upper[e]	(ha)	(%)
			Without paddy (ha hh^{-1})			
Annual crops	53	1.67	1.38	1.97	88.8	47
Fallows	38	1.41	1.10	1.72	53.6	28
Orchards	37	0.69	0.50	0.88	25.5	13
Tree plantation	21	1.07	0.66	1.48	22.5	12
Farm	**64**	**2.97**	**2.53**	**3.42**	**190.3**	**100**
			With paddy (ha hh^{-1})			
Annual crops	27	0.97	0.77	1.16	26.1	25
Fallows	21	1.08	0.73	1.42	22.6	22
Orchards	13	0.43	0.21	0.65	5.6	5
Tree plantation	25	1.05	0.63	1.47	26.3	25
Paddies	36	0.63	0.51	0.76	22.7	22
Farm	**36**	**2.87**	**2.48**	**3.26**	**103.3**	**100**

Notes: [a] Areas of land uses were estimated by farmers based on the weight of rice seeds planted (60 kg=1 ha) for annual crops, fallows, orchards, and tree plantation.

[b] Annual crops: Mainly Job's tears (*Coix lacryma-jobi* L.), upland rice, sesame (*Sesamum indicum* L.), and maize (*Zea mays* L.) grown under slash-and-burn systems; Fallows: A plot of land, after a period of crop cultivation, abandoned for natural growth; Orchards: Permanent cropping systems with fruit trees, galangal (*kha*), tiger grass (*kiam*), vegetables, and other cash crops as the main crops; in many cases, this land is used for annual cropping under SBC; Tree plantation: Mainly teak, rubber, eaglewood; Farm: Total area consisting of different land uses owned by an individual household; Paddies: Land areas being bunded and used for crop cultivation, mainly lowland rice.

[c] Sum>64 and 36 because households often have more than one land use.

[d] Lower limit at confidence level of 95%

[e] Upper limit at confidence level of 95%

crops and fallows were the most important land uses practiced by both groups of farmers, and comprised 75% and 47% of the farm area owned by farmers without and with paddy fields, respectively. Land use intensification through perennial crop diversification had reduced the slash-and-burn area by 25% and 30% for farmers without and with paddy fields, respectively. In addition to upland annual crops, farmers with paddy tended to intensify their slash-and-burn areas into tree plantations, while farmers without paddy intensified into both tree plantations and orchards (Table 3).

III-3 *Farmers' Perceptions of* Imperata *Infestation in Relation to Land Uses: Persistence and Areas*

The longest period of *Imperata* invasion into farmlands, as recalled by the farmers interviewed, was 21 years. However, about 95% of farmers reported that *Imperata* had invaded their fields for less than 16 years (Fig. 3a). As a result, we believe that *Imperata*

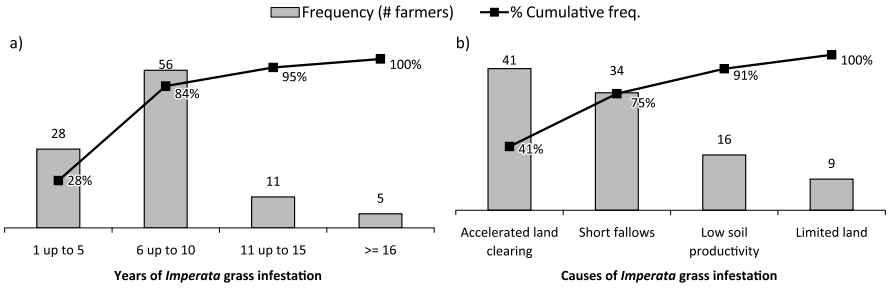


Fig. 3 *Imperata* Infestation: Years of Infestation and Main Causes ($n=100$)

has only recently rooted itself in the study area. Almost all farmers mentioned that the *Imperata*-infested areas had expanded and compacted together in some parts of their farmland.

Asked about their perceptions on the mode of proliferation and persistence of *Imperata* in the area, 91% of the farmers interviewed reported that accelerated clearing of the same piece of land by either slashing or burning practices, short fallow periods (one to two years) or young fallows, and poor soil were the factors essentially responsible for *Imperata* grass infestation (Fig. 3b). The limited areas of land available for SBC compelled the farmers to reduce the length of the fallow periods, which in turn contributed to low soil productivity. Poor soil and dry lands were often repeated problems among the farmer interviewees. On the other hand, because of the reduction in the SBC area, short fallow land had to be cleared more frequently for annual cropping, which again reduced soil productivity and increased the annual weed population.

Due to low biomass, short fallows can result in weak burning. A good burn improves soil productivity through the addition of fertilizer derived from ash and reduced weeds (Saito *et al.* 2006). This study therefore suggests that the positive cause-and-effect relationship between the aforementioned factors is an important cause of *Imperata* infestation in the study area.

Farmers mentioned that *Imperata* grass had invaded fields under different types of land uses. They identified two types of *Imperata* grass infestation: mixed and pure. The former refers to land use or fields where *Imperata* grass grows together with crops or natural vegetation and is known as "mixed *Imperata* stand," while the latter refers to land use or fields where *Imperata* grass grows with a few, or without any, other plant species and is known as "pure *Imperata* stand." *Imperata* infestation area (patch or field size), given a confidence level of 95%, was 0.62–1.13 hectares and 0.37–0.76 hectares for mixed and pure infestation, respectively (Table 4).

The farmers claimed to have experienced higher mixed, rather than pure, infesta-

Table 4 *Imperata* Infestation Area[a]

LUT[b]	Mixed Stand[c]					Pure Stand[d]					Total Infestation	
	n[e]	Average	Lower[f]	Upper[g]	Total	*n*	Average	Lower	Upper	Total	ha	%
						Without paddy (ha)						
AC	*24*	0.53	0.40	0.66	12.7	*21*	0.19	0.13	0.25	4.0	16.6	26
FA	*19*	0.60	0.45	0.76	11.5	*21*	0.83	0.70	0.95	17.4	28.8	45
OR	*15*	0.53	0.35	0.70	7.9	*3*	0.24	-0.20	0.69	0.7	8.6	13
TP	*11*	0.72	0.49	0.95	8.0	*5*	0.42	-0.06	0.90	2.1	10.1	16
AL	***50***	**0.80**	**0.62**	**0.98**	**40.0**	***42***	**0.58**	**0.45**	**0.70**	**24.2**	**64.2**	**100**
						With paddy (ha)						
AC	*15*	0.45	0.31	0.59	6.7	*10*	0.25	0.18	0.32	2.5	9.2	22
FA	*13*	0.65	0.47	0.83	8.4	*14*	0.65	0.45	0.86	9.1	17.5	42
OR	*6*	0.75	0.36	1.15	4.5	*0*	–	–	–	–	4.5	11
TP	*15*	0.70	0.52	0.89	10.6	*1*	0.20	–	–	0.2	10.8	26
AL	***32***	**0.95**	**0.76**	**1.13**	**30.2**	***21***	**0.56**	**0.37**	**0.76**	**11.8**	**42.0**	**100**

Notes: [a] Areas of *Imperata* infestation and land uses were estimated by farmers based on the weight of rice seeds planted (60 kg=1 ha).
[b] AC: Annual crops; FA: Fallows; OR: Orchards; TP: Tree plantation; AL: All land uses
[c] Area of *Imperata* grass mixed with crops or natural regrowth
[d] A portion of land use heavily infested with *Imperata* grass
[e] Number of households
[f] Lower limit at confidence level of 95%
[g] Upper limit at confidence level of 95%

Table 5 *Imperata* Infestation: Percentages of Total Land Uses on Farm

Land Uses	Mixed	Pure	Total Infestation (%)	Total Farm Area (ha)
		Without paddy		
Annual crops	14.3	4.5	18.7	9
Fallows	21.4	32.4	53.7	15
Orchards	31.1	2.8	34.0	5
Tree plantation	35.4	9.4	44.8	5
All land uses	**21.0**	**12.7**	**–**	**34**
		With paddy		
Annual crops	25.8	9.4	35.3	9
Fallows	37.3	40.4	77.7	17
Orchards	81.0	–	81.0	4
Tree plantation	40.2	0.8	40.9	10
All land uses[a]	**29.3**	**11.4**	**–**	**41**
Average	**25.1**	**12.1**	**–**	**37**

Note: [a] Including paddy fields

tion. The most infested land uses were fallows and tree plantation, consisting of 53.7% and 77.7%, and 40.9% to 44.8% of the total area of the particular land uses, or 15% and 5%, and 17% and 10% of the total farm area owned by farmers without and with paddy (Table 5). In addition, farmers with paddy were found to have more severe *Imperata* infestation than farmers without paddy (41% versus 34%). Therefore, it is important that farmers who own paddy fields should not be ignored by the agencies concerned when developing sustainable *Imperata* management strategies in the uplands.

In general, about 37% of the total farmland covered by our study is infested by *Imperata*: about 12% is unproductive for cropping because it is invaded by the pure variety of *Imperata* infestation explained above, and 25% has been rendered less productive with a high risk of crop failure due to mixed *Imperata* infestation. The remaining 63% of farmland, untouched thus far by *Imperata*, is expected to be more productive and therefore suitable for upland crop production. However, this area can also be at risk from an *Imperata* invasion unless proper control and management practices are implemented.

III-4 *Farmers' Perceptions of* Imperata *Infestation in Relation to Crop Production: Problems, Management Strategies, and Constraints*

When farmers were asked to rank the problems they considered offshoots of *Imperata* infestation in ascending order of importance, most of them cited more than one challenge. They believed that reduced crop yields, increased weeding procedures, and reduction in crop growth were the most significant impacts of *Imperata* infestation (Table 6). Repeated clearing of short fallow land for annual cropping, while *Imperata* is still dominant, sig-

Table 6 Main Problems Related to Crop Production Caused by *Imperata* Infestation

Without Paddy (n=64)			With Paddy (n=36)		
Problem	Responses[a]	Rank[b]	Problem	Responses	Rank
Reduced crop yields	64	5.59 (1)	Increased weeding	36	5.22 (1)
Reduced crop growth	63	5.02 (3)	Reduced crop yields	36	5.09 (2)
Reduced crop quality	63	2.35 (7)	Reduced crop quality	36	2.64 (6)
Increased pests[c]	61	4.25 (5)	Reduced crop growth	35	5.03 (3)
Increased weeding	59	5.07 (2)	Reduced farm size	35	4.14 (5)
Reduced farm size[d]	54	4.85 (4)	Increased pests	34	4.94 (4)
Reduced soil fertility	30	2.73 (6)	Reduced soil fertility	8	2.13 (7)

Notes: [a] Number of responses

[b] Numbers outside the parentheses are the overall weights (relative frequency multiplied by ranking values given by a farmer, i.e., 0.7 is the most important and 0.1 the least important) for the corresponding problems. Numbers in the parentheses represent overall ranking, where the greater the overall weighting value the more important the problem.

[c] Mainly rats and subterranean pests

[d] Reduced cultivable land

nificantly increases the need for weeding. As a result, maintaining crop yields by providing adequate weeding can be a great challenge for farmers in the study area. Chikoye *et al.* (2000) estimated crop yield reduction attributable to competition from *Imperata* grass to be 76–80% in cassava, 78% in yam, and 50% in maize. International Institute of Tropical Agriculture (IITA) (1997) reported that weed control operations in *Imperata*-infested fields could be required as often as three to six times per season depending on the type of crop and the level of infestation. Reduced farm size or cultivable land was considered a less significant problem, although farm sizes had reportedly been reduced by 12.7% due to pure *Imperata* infestation. Reduced soil fertility was also considered less important in the study area, although some studies in other areas of northern Laos reported that farmers cited the presence of *Imperata* as a key indicator of poor soil and land degradation (Saito *et al.* 2006; Lestrelin *et al.* 2010).

Table 7 Farmers' Strategies to Overcome *Imperata* Infestation

Strategy	Main Problems Caused by *Imperata* Infestation							
	Reduced Crop Yields	Reduced Crop Quality	Reduced Crop Growth	Increased Weeding	Reduced Farm Size	Increased Pests	Reduced Soil Fertility	*Average*
Without paddies (n=64)				*Relative frequency (%)*				
Weeding[a]	51.7	54.4	72.5	4.2	40.4	20.7	29.4	*39.0*
Fallowing[b]	19.0	35.1	19.6	70.8	42.1	5.2	54.9	*35.2*
Applying chemicals[c]	22.4	5.3	3.9	27.6	17.5	12.5	3.9	*13.3*
Exchanging labor[d]	–	–	–	43.1	–	–	–	*6.2*
Applying fertilizer	1.7	5.3	3.9	–	–	–	11.8	*3.2*
Traditional pest control[e]	–	–	–	–	–	12.5	–	*1.8*
Changing crops[f] or enterprise[g]	5.2	–	–	–	–	–	–	*0.7*
Hiring labor	–	–	–	3.4	–	–	–	*0.5*
With paddies (n=36)				*Relative frequency (%)*				
Weeding	54.3	51.4	65.7	–	40.6	21.2	22.6	*36.5*
Fallowing	20.0	40.0	14.3	71.4	31.3	6.1	54.8	*34.0*
Applying chemicals	20.0	2.9	2.9	12.1	15.6	7.1	3.2	*9.1*
Exchanging labor	–	–	–	48.5	3.1	–	–	*7.4*
Changing crops or enterprise	2.9	2.9	5.7	3.0	9.4	7.1	3.2	*4.9*
Applying fertilizer	2.9	2.9	11.4	–	–	–	16.1	*4.7*
Traditional pest control	–	–	–	–	–	14.3	–	*2.0*
Hiring labor	–	–	–	9.1	–	–	–	*1.3*

Notes: [a] In addition to the common hand weeding, other weeding methods such as hoeing, uprooting, slashing, and plowing were also employed.

[b] Letting cropped fields lie idle to grow naturally and shade out *Imperata*

[c] Mainly herbicides (applied during land preparation just before crop planting) and insecticides

[d] Farmers usually organized themselves into a group to exchange or share labor. Working together as a group, farmers can complete a field task (e.g., weeding) in short periods of time and then quickly move on to other farmers' fields. Farm owners do not pay wages for exchange labor.

[e] Trapping and digging, especially for rodent species

[f] Planting crops that are able to grow and compete with *Imperata* better than upland rice can

[g] Raising livestock (mainly pigs and poultry) and engaging in off-farm employment

Table 8 Main Constraints to *Imperata* Control

Without Paddy (n=64)			With Paddy (n=36)		
Constraints	Responses[a]	Rank[b]	Constraints	Responses	Rank
Lack of labor	58	4.83 (1)	Lack of capital	34	4.44 (3)
Land shortage	54	3.85 (4)	Rice shortage	34	3.71 (4)
Rice shortage	56	3.89 (3)	Lack of labor	33	4.67 (1)
Lack of capital	53	4.75 (2)	Land shortage	33	4.58 (2)
Lack of technology and knowledge	39	3.28 (5)	Lack of technology and knowledge	23	3.22 (5)
Uncontrolled fires	15	1.53 (6)	Uncontrolled fires	8	2.00 (6)

Notes: [a] Number of responses

[b] Numbers outside the parentheses are the overall weights (relative frequency multiplied by ranking values given by a farmer, i.e., 0.6 is the most important and 0.1 the least important) for the corresponding constraints. Numbers in the parentheses represent overall ranking, where the greater the overall weighting value the more important the constraint.

To cope with the problem of *Imperata* infestation, farmers use a wide range of management strategies. Some measures, such as weeding, fallowing the land, applying chemicals and fertilizers, and pest control, are technological/technical; while exchange labor, changes to new crops or enterprises, and the hiring of laborers are more economic and/or social. Weeding, fallowing the land, applying chemicals, and exchange labor are the chief strategies adopted by farmers both with and without paddy fields to tackle most of the issues that they face (Table 7). The planting of new crops and the setting up of new enterprises such as raising livestock or off-farm activities are important strategies adopted by farmers when the regular crop produces very low yield. Many farmers in the study area have switched from the cultivation of upland rice to the cultivation of Job's tears or maize because the latter crops can compete with *Imperata* and grow better on their farms.

However, there are many constraints to the effective implementation of such strategies. Most of the constraints cited by the interviewees are social and economic rather than technological/technical. Lack of labor and capital, a shortage of rice, and limited cultivable land are considered the chief constraints by farmers (Table 8). The lack of technology and knowledge in dealing with the problems caused by *Imperata* is considered a less important constraint; this indicates that the farmers are satisfied with their current level of knowledge and prevailing technologies. This is probably because the farmers have no idea, nor information, of the improved technologies available for dealing with *Imperata* infestation. With the limited technological options within their command, they continue to pursue their traditional SBC practice although the government strives to discourage it.

IV Conclusion

The study found that *Imperata* infestation, which was established about one and a half decades ago, is gradually spreading in the study area and affecting the livelihoods of nearly 38% of households living in the five target villages. Slash-and-burn cultivation (SBC) remains the main agricultural land use system and provides an important source of food and cash income for farmers. Most of the farmers are concerned about the negative impacts of *Imperata*, although it does yield income in small measure to some farmers. The positive cause-and-effect relationship between the accelerated clearing of the same piece of land, short fallow periods, declining soil productivity, and land shortage is believed to be the primary cause of *Imperata* infestation in the study area.

The study has shown that about 37% of farmland is infested with *Imperata*: 12% is rendered unproductive for cropping due to the pure form of the infestation, while 25% of the land has become less productive, with a high risk of crop failure, due to the mixed form of the infestation. The remaining 63% of farmland, so far free of infestation, is also considered to be at risk unless appropriate preventive management practices are employed.

It is the considered view of most of the farmers interviewed that reduced crop yield, increased weeding, and reduced crop growth are the chief problems caused by *Imperata* infestation. To cope with these issues more effectively, the farmers often implement a combination of strategies and practices, the most common of which are weeding, fallowing the land, applying chemicals, and exchange labor. However, such measures encounter many constraints due to lack of labor and capital, land shortages, rice shortage, and limited land. Given the constraints faced and the prevailing technologies used, increased *Imperata* infestation in fallow lands will make it very difficult for farmers to intensify the SBC system into a more permanent, diversified, and productive agricultural system, which is a high priority of the government development policy in the uplands. To meet this challenge, knowledge about the causes, problems, and management strategies and acknowledgement of the constraints perceived by farmers vis-à-vis *Imperata* infestation must be collated, correlated, and addressed by the research and development communities working in the uplands. This will enable systematic and integrated interventions combining technological, social, economic, and political resolutions.

Accepted: February 7, 2013

Acknowledgments

We thank the Agriculture and Forestry Office of Nambak District for providing staff to work with us and the communities; local community leaders for their help organizing villagers; and the farmers for valuable information. This study was financially supported by the Thailand Research Fund under the CLMV-T DSS Graduate Degree Program Research Initiative: 1st Phase (Contract No. RDG52O0003-LV01).

References

ADB. 2001. *Participatory Poverty Assessment*. Vientiane: Asian Development Bank.

Ashby, J. A. 1990. *Evaluating Technology with Farmers: A Handbook*. Cali, Columbia: International Center for Tropical Agriculture.

Brown, S.; and Lugo, A. E. 1990. Effects of Forest Clearing and Succession on the Carbon and Nitrogen Content of Soils in Puerto Rico and US Virgin Islands. *Plant and Soil* 124: 53–64.

Chikoye, D.; Ekeleme, F.; and Ambe, J. T. 1999. Survey of Distribution and Farmer Perceptions of Speargrass (*Imperata cylindrica*) in Cassava-Based Cropping Systems in West Africa. *International Journal of Pest Management* 45: 305–312.

Chikoye, D.; Manyong, V. M.; and Ekeleme, F. 2000. Characteristics of Speargrass (*Imperata cylindrica*) Dominated Fields in West Africa: Crop, Soil Properties, Farmer Perceptions and Management Strategies. *Crop Protection* 19: 481–487.

Chikoye, D.; Manyong, V. M.; Carsky, R. J.; Ekeleme, F.; Gbehounou, G.; and Ahanchede, A. 2002. Response of Speargrass (*Imperata cylindrica*) to Cover Crops Integrated with Handweeding and Chemical Control in Maize and Cassava. *Crop Protection* 21: 145–156.

Foppes, J.; and Ketphanh, S. 2005. Non-timber Forest Products for Poverty Reduction and Shifting Cultivation Stabilization in the Uplands of Lao PDR. In *Poverty Reduction and Shifting Cultivation Stabilization in the Uplands of Lao PDR: Technologies, Approaches and Methods for Improving Upland Livelihoods*, edited by Bounthong Bouahom, Aiden Glendinning, Sophie Nilsson, and Michael Victor, pp. 181–193. Vientiane: NAFRI.

Fujisaka, S. 1991. A Diagnosis Survey of Shifting Cultivation in Northern Laos: Targeting Research to Improve Sustainability and Productivity. *Agroforestry Systems* 13: 95–109.

Garrity, D. P.; Soekardi, M.; Van Noordwijk, M.; De la Cruz R.; Pathak, P. S.; Gunasena, H. P. M.; Van So, N.; Huijun, G.; and Majid, N. M. 1997. The *Imperata* Grasslands of Tropical Asia: Area, Distribution and Typology. *Agroforestry Systems* 36: 3–29.

Gourou, P. 1942. *L'utilisation du sol en Indochina* [Utilization of soils in Indochina]. Center d'études de politique étrangère. Paris: Paul Hartmann.

IITA. 1997. *Annual Report 1987*. Ibadan: International Institute of Tropical Agriculture.

JICA. 2001. *Master Plan Study on Integrated Agriculture Development in Lao PDR*, 3 vols. Lao PDR: Japan International Cooperation Agency and Ministry of Agriculture and Forestry.

Jones, P.; Sysomvang, S.; and Amphaychith, H. 2005. Village Land Use and Livelihood Issues Associated with Shifting Cultivation, Village Relocation and Village Merging Programmes in the Uplands of Phonxay District, Luang Prabang Province. In *Poverty Reduction and Shifting Cultivation Stabilization in the Uplands of Lao PDR: Technologies, Approaches and Methods for Improving Upland Livelihoods*, edited by Bounthong Bouahom, Aiden Glendinning, Sophie Nilsson, and Michael Victor, pp. 149–159. Vientiane: NAFRI.

Keoboualapha, B; Onpraphai, T; Jintrawet, A; Simaraks, S; and Polthanee, A. 2013. *Imperata* Grassland

Mapping in Northern Uplands of Lao PDR: Areas, Distribution, Characteristics and Implications for Slash-and-Burn Cultivation. *Southeast Asian Studies* 2(2): 383–399.

Lestrelin, G.; Pelletreau, A.; and Valentin, C. 2010. *Local Knowledge and Land Degradation: A Participatory Case Study in the Uplands of Laos*. Vientiane: IRD-IWMI-MSEC Project.

Rasul, G.; and Gopal, G. B. 2003. Shifting Cultivation in the Mountains of South and Southeast Asia: Regional Patterns and Factors Influencing the Change. *Land Degradation and Development* 14: 495–508.

Roder, W.; Phengchanh, S.; and Keoboualapha, B. 1997. Weeds in Slash-and-Burn Rice Fields in Northern Laos. *Weed Research* 37: 111–119.

Roder, W.; Phengchanh, S.; Keoboualapha, B.; and Maniphone, S. 1995. *Chromolaena odorata* in Slash-and-Burn Rice Systems of Northern Laos. *Agroforestry Systems* 31: 79–92.

Saito, K.; Linquist, B.; Keoboualapha, B.; Shiraiwa, T.; and Horie, T. 2006. Farmers' Knowledge of Soils in Relation to Cropping Practices: A Case Study of Farmers in Upland Rice Based Slash-and-Burn Systems of Northern Laos. *Geoderma* 136: 64–74.

Whitaker, D. P.; Barth, H. A.; Berman, S. M.; Heimann, J. M.; MacDonald, J. E.; Martindale, K. W.; and Shinn, R. S. 1972. *Area Handbook for Laos*. Washington, DC: US Government Printing Office.

World Bank and Australian International Development Assistance Bureau. 1989. Lao PDR: Preparation Report, Fifth Agricultural Development Project.

Strong Soldiers, Failed Revolution: The State and Military in Burma, 1962–88

YOSHIHIRO NAKANISHI

Singapore and Kyoto: NUS Press in association with Kyoto University Press, 2013, xxi+358 p.

Millions of words have been written about politics in Myanmar since the collapse of General Ne Win's socialist revolution in 1988. However, works of genuine scholarship on the structure and underlying nature of Myanmar politics are as rare as snow in summer. *Strong Soldiers, Failed Revolution* is a welcome exception. Yoshihiro Nakanishi has made a significant addition to the meagre literature on the politics of modern Myanmar. My criticisms which follow, and there are several, in no one way detract from the fundamental contribution that this book makes in confirming how the political and administrative core structure of the post-1962 state in Myanmar, the army, was constructed and survived unto today. The stability, and continuity, of army rule in Myanmar since 1962 is, as Dr. Nakanishi makes clear, unusual and requires explanation. The central chapters of this volume provide an explanation of that stability and grounds it in detailed, empirical, and highly original research.

Chapters four through seven are the most important parts of the argument of *Strong Soldiers, Failed Revolution*, but the earlier and later chapters are also important contributions to our understanding of modern Burmese politics, although at places one can take issue with some of the points the author advances. Chapter one provides an overview of the volume and takes the reader through some of the relevant, and sometimes irrelevant, largely American, political science literature on comparative politics. If words mean anything, some of this is just jargon, such as "dictatorship democracies," which some seem to favor. However, this chapter is important in setting the scene, particularly as the author does not make the mistake of many commentators on Myanmar politics and dismiss General Ne Win's commitment to his socialist revolution. He was willing to deny his army resources for the sake of that revolution, and that sacrifice became part of its strength and the reason the army could continue to rule after the revolution had failed.

The second chapter provides the historical background to the Ne Win revolution. The author's

grasp of this material is rather weaker than of the more recent history, though perhaps some of the problems stem from the fact that the language he is using has been translated at least three times—from English into Japanese and back into English again. For example, colonial Burma never had a governor-general (p. 33). It was the British Government of Burma Act of 1935 which separated Burma from India in 1937, not 1936 (also p. 33), though later this author gives the dates accurately (p. 38). These are petty criticisms, though it is important to note that the so-called British "divide and rule policy" was an accusation made by Burmese nationalists, and perhaps a consequence of British rule. Whether it was intentional is highly debatable. Aung San did not go to London to negotiate independence with the colonial governor, Sir Hubert Rance, but with the British Prime Minister, Clement Attlee (p. 50), the "Panrong agreement" is presumably the "Panglong agreement," though whether it is a document proposing federalism is debateable (also p. 50), and the Mujahids wanted to merge northern Arakan with East Pakistan, not form a separate Islamic state (p. 51). However, as no one will read this book for the sake of this background chapter, this criticism is by-the-by.

Chapter three on how the ideology of the Burma Socialist Programme Party came to be written is informative, though the author's lack of reference to a third ideological tract, the *Specific Characteristics*, which was the last published as a corrective to earlier texts, is surprising, given how thorough is his research. The author's attempt to draw a distinction between ideology and philosophy, at least in terms of political practice, I find unconvincing. That the author of the Party's ideology, U Chit Hlaing, could use his theory to justify two different regimes should surprise no one who studies politics. Chit Hlaing was following the orders of his military employers. Whether Ne Win had a clear idea of what kind of ideology he required to justify his rule to himself and others is something that Dr. Nakanishi doubts, but that he gave Chit Hlaing instructions he confirms. In an age of ideology, had Chit Hlaing's ideas not been available, they, or something like them, would have had to be invented because that was the *zeitgeist* of what was then called Third World politics, in this case in a Theravada Buddhist context.

Chapters four through seven provide the reason *Strong Soldiers, Failed Revolution* will be cited by other Myanmar scholars as well as comparative political scientists for years to come. Chapter four explains why the single party that Ne Win invented was never able to gain autonomy from its military founders. Finding jobs for the officer corps as they retired from the army was not only a personal kindness but a political strategy and prerequisite for remaining in power. Chapter five, entitled "Destroy the Bureaucracy! Transformation of the Civilian Bureaucracy in the Name of the Revolution," provides a detailed account of how the bureaucracy became captured by retired military personnel. Whether Ne Win realized what he was doing when he created the first deputy ministers in 1969 is unclear, but now we know the consequences. However, I believe that the author underestimates the weaknesses in the bureaucracy that already existed when the army seized power in 1962. It was then just a shadow of what had existed in 1942, the last effective year

of British rule. When many of the remaining senior bureaucrats resigned on the cusp of independence, the then ruling civilian party was able to fill many posts with their own appointees, regardless of their qualifications. This, in part, explains why the army was able to so dramatically improve the administration of the country during the first, brief period of its rule, in 1958–60.

Chapter six, entitled "'Winner-Take-All': An Analysis of Burma's Political Elite," begins with a misleading and unhelpful allusion to something called "Burma's political culture." What that may be remains in doubt, other than that some analysts, when at a loss to explain political decisions, gloss what they do not know in terms of an unknowable "political culture." Happily, Dr. Nakanishi quickly abandons that discussion and returns to the close empirical analysis of the members of the legislative and other bodies in the government of Burma during the 1970s and 1980s. He once more demonstrates, despite Ne Win's apparent intentions, that army and ex-army personnel dominated the government just as they did the party. This leads logically into the final substantive chapter, seven. Here his command of his data is impressive, though his lack of knowledge of pre-1962 history lets him down. Amongst Myanmar's ministers of defense, he omits Bo Let Ya and U Win (p. 243), but this minor error detracts not at all from the empirical validity of the author's conclusions.

After a very cogent and helpful restatement of the key points in the thesis of the *Strong Soldiers, Failed Revolution*, Dr. Nakanishi does what everyone writing a book on Myanmar these days seems to feel impelled to do and speculates about what comes next. Much of this is quite helpful and informative, particularly suggesting how the legacy of the Ne Win-BSPP period allowed the post-1988 military regime not only to maintain itself in power, but to expand and develop the capacity to make the transition to a civilianized regime after 2011. Indeed, this could be expanded upon with advantage for one of the most misunderstood aspects of modern Myanmar politics is the nature and purposes of the military regime between 1988 and 2010.

Unfortunately, he falls into what I see as an error in being drawn into the discourse of political critics of the army, rather than remaining in the discourse of political analysis. He repeats the previously heard allegation made by critics of the post-1988 military regime that the army then perceived the general public as a threat and "also exhibited a sense of paternalism" (p. 294). That the army arrogated to itself a claim to be practicing "national" politics in a selfless manner is undoubtedly the case, but there is nothing new in that claim. That was a claim made from the 1940s onwards. Moreover, a reading of the documents of the 1990s indicates the army leadership knew exactly who their political opponents were, and they were not some generalized "citizenry." Indeed, the army used the near same language as in the socialist period: the people's army, together with the people, against the enemies of the state, whether leftists or rights. As in the introduction to the book, so also at the conclusion, Nakanishi perhaps becomes victim to the same philosophical fault as U Chit Hlaing. That democracy is the reigning ideology of today, rather than socialism, is obvious, but in terms of their approaches to the subject of comparative politics, there is little

difference. Democracy, like socialism, is not an analytical category, it is a vague ideological preference.

Robert H. Taylor
Institute of South East Asian Studies (Singapore)

Surabaya, 1945–2010: Neighbourhood, State and Economy in Indonesia's City of Struggle

Robbie Peters
Singapore: NUS Press, 2013, 272 p.

Before moving to Jakarta, I lived in Surabaya as a student from 1982 to 1990. The Surabaya of then was just beginning to represent itself as a world class city with the new landmarks of Tunjungan Plaza and later Delta Plaza, forming a belt of international hotels, offices, and shopping malls around kampung neighborhoods. Little did I realize that the city then was undergoing a major transformation marked by a shift from a city of work to a space of consumption. Robbie Peters came to Surabaya almost a decade later but at a most critical time in the history of the city during the fateful year of 1998. He thus understood especially well how the aftermath of 1998 (and what came before) had triggered a series of unprecedented crises in the forms of ninja, terrorism, and urban renewals all of which have profoundly shaped the neighborhood of Dinoyo—the subject of his study.

Surabaya, 1945–2010 focuses on a kampung where people live a life at the margins of center of the city across different socio-political fields of postcolonial Indonesia. This neighborhood is specific in its proximity to factories and later shopping malls which took advantage of their labor, but the people in the kampung are more informal workers than proletariats. This set the stage for Peters to show the uneven relations between the kampung and the city as a kind of tension-filled duality that represents the larger relation between people and the state. Sometimes it appears we are being offered a choice between seeing Dinoyo surrender to the bureaucratic rationality of the state or stay with their kampung ethos of solidarity. The choice seems clear when outside in the street lurks the world of state power and capitalist modernization.

Consistent with the interest of anthropologists, Peters shows how Dinoyo kampung is given substance of neighborliness through the practices of *slametan* (feast-giving) to observe important events that happen in one's life such as death, marriage, and birth, which at once constitute a sense of solidarity and community. Peters however, does not regard kampung as inherently coherent or harmonious, indeed he believes its formation to be an outgrowth of control and crisis, territoriality and domination against which *slametan* continues to be enacted. This kind of formulation allows politics (rather than culture) to play a significant part in the book. *Surabaya, 1945–2010* is thus,

an anthropological book that goes beyond anthropology, or better yet, it is a book that represents the best side of the discipline. Against the depiction of culture as a timeless way of living, Peters takes seriously the historical dimension of the kampung cultures, making them part of the violence of the national time as he emphasizes social change while identifying key practices that continue to be reproduced for self-definition and self-defense.

The first two chapters already show the coordination of time and space. They introduce Dinoyo within the changing context of Indonesia and see it as a "third" space beyond the confrontation between the city and the village which constitutes the essence of an urban kampung. The story starts from chapter 3 which sets the tone of the book by offering a chilling account of the 1965 purge of the communists and its associated space of kampung. Peters narrates the story (in this and other chapters) through the memories of people he got to know such as Eko, Rukun, Neng, and Arifin to show how Dinoyo is never a coherent space. The politics that culminated in the purge of 1965 did radically change kampung lives. This chapter raises questions of how the terror of 1965 affects the subsequent development of the Dinoyo. What do the inhabitants think about their communities, old and new? In the context of 1965, what do we mean by the subsequent Kampung Improvement Project (KIP)? Is it indeed a "success" story of a pro-poor urban agenda?

Chapter 4 responds to these questions by suggesting that KIP was involved in the "pacification" of the kampung world of Dinoyo in the aftermath of 1965. However, this was not an easy enterprise. There are interesting discussions here about the challenges of collecting data for the project. It details the processes by which the kampung is approached by technologies of measurement, such as maps, statistics, and questionnaires. Peters pays attention to how this technology of abstraction was carried out by civil servants and university researchers who worked from the position of observers, standing outside the kampung. This reveals not only the limits of their methods, but also the sense of gap and otherness as well as a distrust of the kampung residents to government officers due to their memories of the terrifying 1965 purges by the New Order. The KIP was nevertheless accepted eventually when it offered rights to ownership to the occupants of the kampung. However, one would note, as Peters did, that landownership entails the production of a tax-paying "middle class." It also constitutes a division within the communities of the kampung as landownership produces the discourses of legibility and citizenship. Peters devotes an insightful account of how to secure the neighborhood at the time when the "middle class" house owners in the kampung increasingly feel the threat from the floating mass (*massa*).

In the 1980s, I remember people in Surabaya seem to identify the urban space through the width of the streets. The wide street (where malls, hotels, and government buildings are located) is associated with the image of the city, whereas the alleyways, such as *gang* and *lorong* are seen as the world of kampung. The world of the city and that of the kampung were indeed clearly different but they were not so divided. *Becak* (rickshaw) could then bring people to plazas, and kampung was accessible by any two-wheel vehicle. The two worlds constituted each other beyond

the physical environment. There were social economic ties as well even though this was marked by uneven relations. In chapter 5, Peters makes it clear how the move from factories to malls to symbolize national urban progress was supported by kampung which provided inexpensive accommodations for sales girls working in the mall. The kampung not only contributed to the development of the city, but it also watched the rise and the fall of those who engaged with the city. Peters nicely describes this process by which the malls, the hotels, and the entertainment districts came to symbolize not so much the idea of progress, but the illegitimacy of the state and the crisis of society as the New Order began to crumble at the end of the 1990s.

Chapter 6 shows the impact of monetary crisis (*krismon*) in the 1990s and how it affected the material conditions of the Dinoyo neighborhood. The focus of this chapter however is on how people survived that difficult time; how different enterprises were created to cope with the time of crisis. The people of Dinoyo intensified and diversified their existing informal networks by doing what they could to generate income, from setting up coffee stalls to riverside service enterprises. The best part of this chapter is the discussion on how cultures were reinvented to live through tough times, from pigeon racing to betting on soccer games to prostitution, and how these different activities were received by the authorities which sought to control them.

The effects of crisis produced uncanny happenings. Chapter 7 deals with the infamous stories of Ninja terror that for a while, saw East Java become a spectacle for a global media. Peters argues that the hysteria over the attack and killing of ninja is best understood as a "metaphor for anonymous incursions," a kind of defensive response to an uncertain condition of life that occurred when the source of power that used to inhabit the neighborhood suddenly became unclear and subjected to misappropriation by unlocatable forces during the economic and political crises. There is a shadow of Foucauldian analysis in this chapter. The self-defense of the community began with the perception of one's own self that needed clarification by way of imagining the incursion of "outsiders" whose identities were hard to locate. These others (the insane, the ninja, the informant, and even the police officer) constituted profound anxieties in the community and yet they were perversely instrumental for the community to regain its self-hood. At the time of political transition, it wasn't clear to members of the neighborhood, as to Peters, if they themselves were the living dead of the spectral New Order state.

Chapter 8 shows how social life in the kampung in the Post-Suharto era is virtually uncontainable by the state. The key component in the "art of not being governed" (to use James Scott's term) is the ritual of *slametan*. The enactment of this inclusive tradition serves to recognize both residents and non-residents, and they thus counter the exclusionary practice of residential cards. The "being there" constitutes a community beyond the official recognition of IDs. The focus of this chapter thus is the formation of collective identity and the role of alleyway as an almost organic social space that helps bring people together. Peters examines in detail the use of the alleyway in the event of a death, and shows how people in Dinoyo master the alley. The focus on the alley

allows Peters to discuss how people in Dinoyo act on the street, the counter-space of alley, which is considered as a domain of the outside world marked by domination and conflict (with authorities and upper middle class).

Chapter 9 concerns the present challenge of Dinoyo. Peters discusses some of the most recent attempts by the municipality of Surabaya to rebuild itself after the "time of insanity," but in this last chapter Peters shows how the New Order's techniques of capitalist modernization continue well into the post-Suharto era, as if time had never changed or in fact gotten worse for the kampung folks of Dinoyo. In the present era of *reformasi*, when the notion of *rakyat* (people) has become the keyword for political legitimacy, the folks of Dinoyo continue to be marginalized. This however does not mean that people in Dinoyo are just victims of urban renewal. In the last section on "Sovereignty and Slametan" Peters nicely brings back the ritual of *Slametan* for a wedding that enacts social identity to reproduce the agency of Dinoyo's residents. This *Slametan* defies submission to state registration.

In the end, after reading the conclusion, we realize that what made Dinoyo possible and held itself together is not merely the power of culture (such as that of *Slametan*), but also politics, or political bargaining. Peters approaches Dinoyo slowly and attentively to reveal the capacity of people in living their daily lives. *Surabaya 1945–2000* is an excellent book represented in an engaging narrative via life stories of the kampung people. It is also a book attentive to scholarship. Peters pays homage to earlier anthropological studies of Indonesian kampungs, following their paths and themes while engaging critically with their findings. Robbie continues this great tradition of studying kampung, making sense of the people's lives and the changes they experienced, but he does it in a way that makes us aware of the politics of the city and the nation. We learn from his study that the new time of *reformasi* is nothing other than an extension of the past New Order. At least this is what is seen from the margin. From the kampung, Peters offers a fascinating study of a neighborhood undergoing a time of insanity when the future is uncertain and the past is carried over to blur the present.

Abidin Kusno
Institute of Asian Research, University of British Columbia

The Encyclopedia of Indonesia in the Pacific War: In Cooperation with the Netherlands Institute for War Documentation

PETER POST, WILLIAM H. FREDERICK, IRIS HEIDEBRINK, and SHIGERU SATO, eds.
Leiden: Brill Academic Publishers, 2010, xxix+684 p.

The twentieth century has been characterized as the century of wars. It experienced two world

wars, many regional wars in the context of the Cold War, and various kinds of internal wars. These wars produced many casualties, both military and civilian. In return, the many nation-states that the two great wars brought into being have made it a habit to commemorate those who sacrificed their lives for their countries. By the end of the century, "remembering war" has become a common exercise for national governments and a civic duty for citizens. In this context, intensive efforts at recollection, collective reflection and redress in relation to these wars have materialized in academia as well as public sectors. In addition, international and intergovernmental cooperation has produced new memories, understandings, and interpretations of the wars. As such, the "memory boom" has taken place in many parts of the globe (Winter 2006, 1).

Two reasons deserve to be mentioned regarding this trend from a global perspective. First, as those who experienced war age, they are eager to archive their memories for future generations. In the Netherlands, many memorials and statues bearing the names of those who fell in a war have been established by local communities. Second, many developing countries that were also former European or American colonies have been democratized in the process of "the Third Wave" (Huntington 1991). For these countries, democratization has been a process of confronting colonial and authoritarian legacies through historical fact-finding efforts that are concerned with addressing human rights violations that occurred under authoritarian regimes (De Brito *et al.* 2001). Thus, the politics of memory sheds light on those who suffered as well as the oppressed. This process has made possible, for instance, international cooperation between a former colony (Indonesia) and its erstwhile suzerain power (The Netherlands) to present the truth about what happened during the war period.

Under these changing international and domestic socio-political circumstances, over the years, tremendous international collaborative efforts have borne fruit in the form of the *Encyclopedia of Indonesia in the Pacific War*. It is a timely publication and provides a broad understanding of the topic. It has 56 contributors from various parts of the globe with 684 and xxix pages, plus 24 pages of pictures at the end of the volume. It has eight major chapters—chapter one general introduction; chapter two historical overview; five middle chapters on matters directly related to the Japanese occupation (chapters three to seven), namely, administration and policies, coercion and control, economy, society and social change, and culture; and chapter eight on postwar burdens and memory. The 156-page long "Lexicon of People, Events and Institutions" addendum to the book is especially useful for readers and scholars in need of quick reference. To describe this *Encyclopedia* as "a strong encyclopedia" that "can help you to get an early, broad understanding of a topic" (Storey 2008, 5) is indeed accurate.

In his introduction Peter Post, one of the editors of the *Encyclopedia*, explains the purpose of the tome. It "aims to go beyond the myths and misconceptions and treats the varied aspects of the Japanese occupation period in a comparative way," "gives factual details of how different groups of people initially reacted towards Japanese military rule and how these groups experienced the

changes in their living circumstances," and "pays attention to the legacies of the war in the three main countries concerned, e.g. Japan, Indonesia, and The Netherlands" (p. 2). According to Post, four major advancements in the historiography of the Japanese period in Indonesia over the last two decades have made this *Encyclopedia* project possible. Two of the new developments relate to the availability of records and materials; these were made possible through a project of the Japan Center for Asian Historical Records initiated by the National Archives of Japan, which has made public all Asia-related records, and the Netherlands Institute for War Documentation which has digitized relevant Malay-language newspapers and periodicals and made them publicly available. The other two advancements were the oral history projects—one was "The End of The Netherlands' Colonial Presence in Asia" undertaken by the Foundation for the Oral History of Indonesia of the Royal Netherlands Institute of Southeast Asian and Caribbean Studies, while the other was the "South Sulawesi under the Japanese Occupation" by the Center for Regional and Multicultural Studies of Hasanuddin University in Makassar, Indonesia (p. 3). Nevertheless, Post acknowledges that due to the still-limited availability of the sources the *Encyclopedia* spends more pages on developments in Java and Sumatra than in Kalimantan, Sulawesi, and the islands of the eastern archipelago (p. 4).

The main body of the book is devoted to the description and analysis of "occupation" by the Japanese. But since the chapters do not have footnotes or detailed references (only selected references), the readers will have some difficulties if they wish to pursue further information or even to crosscheck the accuracy of an introduced fact. There is no information on how the reader can access the sources or the materials on which contributors have relied. The *Encyclopedia* appears to have been built upon many untouched and scattered materials gathered and analyzed in the course of their research. It is, therefore, regrettable that such new and no doubt valuable sources are not available to the reader. This shortcoming also makes it difficult to measure the original contributions offered by this *Encyclopedia* compared to the existing literature on the subject.

Some of the new findings and developments in the scholarship are made implicit in the text. For example, William Bradley Horton's piece on "Comfort women" would not have been written without the comprehensive research conducted and funded by the Asian Women's Fund established in 1995 (active until 2007). The chapter on "Postwar Burdens and Memory" also points out some new aspects concerning Japanese, Dutch, and Indonesian individuals as well as governmental efforts in remembering World War II. The newness of these sections reflects the recent development of international norms concerning human rights that focus more on individual memory and the present actions of those who suffered for redress.

The *Encyclopedia*, however, does not address the current politics of war memory, such as redress. The issue of reparations entered a new phase at the end of the twentieth century (Bottigliero 2004; Miller and Kumar 2007) and it was a major concern among states after World War II. Japan, as a defeated nation paid reparations to its Asian neighbors after the San Francisco

Peace Treaty was signed in 1951, as proposed by the United States. On the state-to-state level, by paying reparations, the Japanese government perceived it had fulfilled its duty and redeemed its past transgressions to its neighbors. But these reparations rarely reached local individual victims. In the meantime, a new idea regarding reparations has gained currency since the 1990s, an idea that is rooted in the concept of human rights and has created opportunities for individual victims to demand their rights for reparation independently from the state. Victims such as "comfort women" in the former Japanese imperial territories and atomic bomb survivors in Hiroshima and Nagasaki have raised their voices with the support of non-governmental organizations and civil society organizations. It should be noted, however, that the former case draws more attention in the international arena than the latter one, in part because it intersects with gender issues.

The voices of marginalized groups also remain to be heard in the *Encyclopedia*. One representative group was the ethnic Chinese. They constituted a major group within the local populations in the Indies, and yet their socio-political position and experience during the Japanese occupation is understudied. It is partially because the Japanese imagined them as their main enemy when they fought against China, while the Indonesians were their younger brothers, and therefore not many official sources on the Chinese are available. To be fair, the *Encyclopedia* pays careful attention to the Chinese population. Gin Keat Ooi's essay recounts the series of Chinese massacres that took place in South and West Kalimantan, while Didi Kwantanada illustrates the radical sociocultural and educational changes this ethnic group had to confront. But as these accounts are without noted (primary) sources, thus one hardly gets to hear a "Chinese" voice in them. It is a historical fact that the Japanese military authorities interned many Chinese in concentration camps, although few sources are available on the matter. Their experiences and afflictions during this time, however, are vividly featured in literary works published after Indonesia gained independence in August 1945 (Chandra 2012). Although documenting violence against prisoners of war is a challenging task (Jones 2011), it is regrettable that the *Encyclopedia* does not provide new evidence on prison life from the period in question.

The other invisible group is the so-called collaborators with Japanese authority. Such people were not always opportunists; some were realists. In the case of the Philippines, this group includes notable names such as Emilio Aguinaldo, José P. Laurel, and Manuel Roxas. In the case of Indonesia, one may recall Soekarno and Mohammad Hatta as collaborators, and yet many other names are "unknown" or forgotten. For instance, there were many prominent journalists, Indonesian as well as Chinese, who worked for the occupying regime and maintained their reputation even after independence. As I understand that writing about the collaborators is politically sensitive, the *Encyclopedia* appears to maintain a safe distance from this issue.

There is another kind of challenge in constructing historical reality. We still know little about those who died for the "imperial nations" (Winter 2006). In the case of the British Empire, various war memorials record the names of those who "sacrificed their lives" for it. However, in the case

of the Netherlands and its former colonies, the remembrance of war "heroes" seems to exclude those who had died, especially those in the colonies. It is natural to commemorate those who died for the Dutch fatherland, while those who fell defending the colony and sacrificing themselves for an imperial possession, it appears, remain a forgotten issue in Dutch and Indonesian historiography.

Ultimately, does this *Encyclopedia* contribute to construct a common understanding of history concerning Indonesia in the Pacific War? Overcoming "the myths and misconceptions" of occupied Indonesia may not be easy because some of them inevitably are linked with personal and collective experiences and memory. The essays in the *Encyclopedia* may not be accepted by all parties concerned, yet they provide basic elements of the historical facts and developments. This is the first step towards an ideally more complex, multi-faceted understanding of Indonesia during the Pacific War, and is therefore a valuable contribution to future projects of history writing on this topic.

Yamamoto Nobuto 山本信人
Department of Political Science, Faculty of Law, Keio University

References

Asian Women's Fund. 2007. *Digital Museum: The Comfort Women Issue and the Asian Women's Fund*. Accessed February 10, 2013, www.awf.or.jp.

Bottigliero, Ilaria. 2004. *Redress for Victims of Crimes under International Law*. Leiden: Brill Academic Publications.

Chandra, Elizabeth. 2012. Indies Prison Notebooks. *IIAS Newsletter* 62(6). Accessed February 10, 2013, http://www.iias.nl/sites/default/files/IIAS_NL62_06.pdf.

De Brito, Alexandra Barahona; Enriquez, Carmen Gonzalez; and Aguilar, Paloma, eds. 2001. *The Politics of Memory and Democratization: Transitional Justice in Democratizing Societies*. Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press.

Huntington, Samuel P. 1991. *The Third Wave: Democratization in the Late Twentieth Century*. Norman: University of Oklahoma Press.

Jones, Heather. 2011. *Violence against Prisoners of War in the First World War: Britain, France and Germany, 1914–1920*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Miller, Jon; and Kumar, Rahul. 2007. *Reparations: Interdisciplinary Inquiries*. Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press.

Storey, William Kelleher. 2008. *Writing History: A Guide for Students*. 3rd ed. Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press.

Winter, Jay. 2006. *Remembering War: The Great War between Memory and History in the Twentieth Century*. New Haven and London: Yale University Press.

Japan's Relations with Southeast Asia: The Fukuda Doctrine and Beyond

LAM PENG ER, ed.

London and New York: Routledge, 2013, xvii+203 p.

The Fukuda Doctrine, enunciated in 1977, is one of the most important developments in Japanese relations with Southeast Asia after the Second World War. Marking the end of a low-profile policy that focused primarily on trade, the Doctrine suggests a Japanese willingness to assume the "responsibilities" that befit a big power in Southeast Asia, something many Americans and Southeast Asians had been urging Japan to do. But mindful of their war record in Asia and their domestic politics, Japan eschewed the approach of a "normal" big power, or what the editor of this book calls a neorealist approach. Thus, the use of military force was rejected and economic power, if used for political purposes, was only exercised indirectly. The emphasis of the Doctrine was on what was called a "heart-to-heart" relationship, an approach that attempted to cultivate the trust and goodwill needed to ensure some semblance of equality between a big power like Japan and a group of developing countries like ASEAN.

This book deems the Doctrine a Japanese foreign policy success. Largely an outcome of a conference organized on the 13th anniversary of the Doctrine in 2007,[1] this book however, has chosen not only to treat the Doctrine purely in bilateral terms but also to go beyond to that of the relationship between the Fukuda Doctrine and the regional architecture i.e. East Asian community building. To consider these two themes, the editor has drawn on contributions from academics in Japan and ASEAN and from one Chinese scholar. In addition, someone who had a hand in drafting the Doctrine, an ex-Japanese ambassador, was included to provide the perspective of a policy maker.

The book begins with an introduction, after which, it is divided into three parts, of which the first examines the origins and norms of the Fukuda Doctrine since it was first announced, while the second considers the Doctrine, power, and order in Southeast Asia. The third section mainly expatiates on the wider aspect pertaining to the relationship of Japan and ASEAN with the East Asian community. Each section consists of three chapters. Lam Peng Er, the editor, in the introduction, sees significance in the Fukuda Doctrine not only in Japan-ASEAN and East Asian community terms, but also in terms of the establishment of new norms in the international relations of Asia. The major aspects of these norms are the renunciation of power politics based on military capabilities by Japan, a "heart-to-heart" and an equal relationship between Japan and ASEAN. Such norms are not consonant with neorealism, one of the major theories of international relations, and hence unlikely to last, if the neorealist theory applies here. Yet, according to Lam, the Doctrine

1) Another conference was held in Kuala Lumpur in 2007, organized by the Malaysian Association of Japanese Studies (MAJAS). A book also eventuated. See Lee and Md Nasrudin (2009).

has outlasted the Cold War and has undergirded Japan's relations with ASEAN into the twenty-first century. It could conceivably be valid for that of the East Asian community.

Lam also discusses, in the first chapter, the origins, ideas, and praxis of the Fukuda Doctrine, of which an interesting part is an account, albeit short, of how the diplomats drafted the Doctrine and how Fukuda put his stamp on it. Lam goes on to affirm how the Fukuda Doctrine and its spirit of tolerance should underpin an incipient East Asian community. In the second chapter, Edamura Sumio, a former ambassador and a key drafter of the Doctrine, gives the view of an insider. He believes the Doctrine represents diplomacy with vision and echoes Lam in regarding its applicability for a greater East Asia. Yamamoto Yoshinobu, in the third chapter, shows how great power relations have shaped the Doctrine. He argues nevertheless that there is some power element in the Doctrine—at least in practice and application—as it can be interpreted as a measure against, then as a soft counter to, the increasing influence of China. Despite that, he argues that the Doctrine should be considered in theoretical terms as a constructivist approach, a theoretical approach which has only recently come into vogue and something distinct from the neorealist approach.

Two ASEAN scholars, Rizal Sukma and Tang Siew Mun, and a Chinese scholar, Wang Jianwei contributed to the third section. Sukma, from Indonesia, explores how the bilateral relations can cope with the new strategic situation engendered by the power shift in Asia. He argues that an important first step towards this is for both Japan and ASEAN to identify the common challenges facing them in the political and security arenas and to find where their interests converge. He listed many challenges, one of which is to ensure the peaceful rise of China. Wang from China acknowledges that the conscious and purposeful cultivation of hard and soft power by Japan since the Doctrine has given Japan a reservoir of goodwill in the region. As a consequence, China cannot take a hard approach to Southeast Asia, and will likely compete with Japan as to who will be the better practitioner of the heart-to-heart approach. Tang, a Malaysian scholar, examines how Japan is perceived by the ASEAN states in the wake of the Doctrine. Agreeing that the Doctrine is one of Japan's most successful initiatives, he nevertheless thinks it ought to be examined in the light of the changing times and environment.

The third section deals with Japan, Southeast Asia and the East Asian community. In the seventh chapter, Kitti Prasirtsuk from Thailand gives one of the more detailed accounts of the roles Japan and ASEAN can play in an East Asian community. He concludes that through a combination of trade and investment plus cultural exchanges, Japan has advanced *de facto* regional integration in tandem with ASEAN. Yamakage Susumu, the doyen of Japanese scholars on Japanese relations with ASEAN, believes that as far as Japan and ASEAN are concerned, their relationship should remain the central hub of the complex multi-layered schemes of regional cooperation. Finally, Kikuchi Tsutomu argues that the Doctrine is still relevant despite the rise of regional institutions and a regime change in Japan (referring then to the replacement of the Liberal Democratic Party of Japan [LDP] by the Democratic Party of Japan [DPJ]). He also states that it should be Japan's

priority to enhance unity and cooperation among Southeast Asian countries through ASEAN, just as the Doctrine had intended.

The book has done a good job of explaining the importance of the Fukuda Doctrine to those interested in bilateral Japanese-ASEAN relations as it is generally not much appreciated by specialists working on bilateral relations, concerned as they are with the economic penetration of Japan and its possible security posture in Southeast Asia: how much Japan's peace diplomacy or heart-to-heart approach has influenced Southeast Asian perceptions of Japan in a positive way. The book is also right in arguing for the centrality of Japan and ASEAN, and the validity of a heart-to-heart approach, in East Asian regionalism. But it has not made a fully convincing case. Present Sino-Japanese tensions suggest it will take time and very much effort before both nations can be reconciled by the norms of the Fukuda Doctrine to play positive roles in East Asian regional groupings. Furthermore, the book's treatment of theory is far too short. It may not be its main aim but it tantalizes with its rejection of neorealist theory. Could it not have expatiated a bit more on the constructivist theory suggested by Yamamoto Yoshinobu?

Finally, the book could have included the perspective of a scholar from the newer members of ASEAN, the so-called CLMV countries of Cambodia, Laos, Myanmar, and Vietnam. Even if the Doctrine began way before they joined ASEAN, the Doctrine was supposed to bridge Indochina and the old ASEAN. At any rate, an ASEAN 10 poses one of the great challenges facing ASEAN unity, something much desired by the Doctrine.

Lee Poh Ping 李宝平
Institute of China Studies, University of Malaya

Reference

Lee, Poh Ping; and Md Nasrudin Md Akhir. 2009. *Japanese Relations with ASEAN since the Fukuda Doctrine*. Kuala Lumpur: Japan Studies Program, Department of Southeast Asian Studies, Faculty of Arts and Social Sciences, University of Malaya.

The Authority of Influence: Women and Power in Burmese History

JESSICA HARRIDEN

Copenhagen: NIAS Press, 2012, xiii+370 p.

European visitors to Burma in the nineteenth century frequently remarked on what they perceived to be the startling freedom and equality enjoyed by Burmese women, and currently the "unofficial slogan" of the Union of Myanmar's government-approved women's organization states that "Myanmar women have enjoyed equal rights with Myanmar men since time immemorial" (p. 1). But

while it is true that historically Burmese women have had access to economic power and have been able to exercise influence in the domestic sphere, they have also been considered spiritually inferior, and thus unfit for positions of leadership. Largely excluded from direct political power, with a few prominent (and often demonized) exceptions, women in Burma could usually exercise political power only through indirect influence. The upheavals of the colonial and post-colonial eras have not resulted in any measurable increase in the status of Burmese women.

Jessica Harriden's monograph *The Authority of Influence: Women and Power in Burmese History* analyzes women's access to power in Burma, and how this access has changed from the classical era to the present day. In doing so, Harriden enriches the existing understanding of gender and power relations in Burma. The book is divided into nine chapters, ordered chronologically, with the first chapter outlining the cultural context of gender relations in Burma. In this first chapter Harriden unpicks the meaning of power in the Burmese context, distinguishing between the Burmese conceptions of *awza*, an indirect influence, and *ana*, or direct political authority. Burmese women rarely possessed *ana*, although they could exercise *awza*. Expectations regarding power were shaped by religious influences, and also included the notion of *hpoun*, a spiritual power possessed only by men. Women's innate spiritual inferiority meant that while women could command influence in the domestic context, there was deep ambivalence about women exercising direct political power, as exemplified by Burmese attitudes towards those exceptional Burmese women who wielded political authority, discussed in the third chapter.

Chapter two discusses depictions of female power in classical and pre-modern Burma. Given the scope of the subject, Harriden is necessarily selective in the material that she chooses to include here. This chapter combines a much broader chronological scope with a relatively narrow focus on the religious and familial influence of selected elite Burmese women, resulting in an analysis that seems a bit speculative and incomplete in comparison to the following chapters. While many of the early sources concerning women in Burma are prescriptive, incomplete, and possibly fictional, Harriden argues that nonetheless these materials "influenced the cultural construction of gender roles which had important implications for women's ability to exercise social power in the more recent past" (p. 51). Since Harriden does not attempt to give a complete account of female power in the classical and pre-modern eras, but rather focuses on a few important themes, it might have been preferable to integrate this material into the first chapter. Harriden emphasizes that the exercise of female power in Burma, as far as can be judged from the available sources, tended to be indirect. Because of the importance of kinship networks in shaping Burmese power structures, women could exert influence while remaining in their prescribed domestic sphere. While women could be valued for exerting their influence in a subordinate role, women who were more overtly dominant were viewed with suspicion and distrust—the "evil, scheming queen" became a reviled archetype (p. 74). Chapter three focuses on three powerful queens of the Konbaung dynasty who exemplified this archetype: Me Nu, Setkya Dewi, and Supayalat, the last queen of Burma.

Each of these women was popularly depicted as an "evil queen," and accused of exercising power in a manner that was both fundamentally illegitimate and destructive to Burma.

British colonial rule, described in chapter four, changed the status of women in Burma. The British had mixed feelings about Burmese women's economic independence and freedom of movement in the public sphere, and while not a deliberate policy, the effect of British colonial rule was to diminish Burmese women's economic power, as Chinese and Indian migrants competed for the positions that had traditionally been occupied by Burmese women. Whereas traditionally women had sometimes been able to exert political influence indirectly through marriage and family connections, this route to power was diminished as Burmese men were pushed out of positions of administrative authority. By the late nineteenth century, the colonial authorities discouraged marriages between Burmese women and European men, and Burmese nationalists would come to criticize women who engaged in relationships with "foreigners" for diluting Burmese culture and national identity. Women actively participated in the Burmese nationalist movement, but they tended to be confined to subsidiary roles, and subject to male authority.

Although the independent government of Burma was in theory committed to gender equality, in practice women's opportunities for access to political power did not increase with independence. Chapter five's title, "Social Workers, Beauty Queens and Insurgents," sums up the limited options available to Burmese women after independence. Women were limited in the professions that they could access—and almost universally confined to subordinate roles in every context. While women participated in leftist and ethnic minority movements, and at times even assumed leadership roles, they were usually expected to remain subordinate to male authority.

The imposition of military rule, described in chapter six, was disastrous for women's advancement in Burma. The various military dictatorships that ruled Burma from 1962 onwards not only decreased women's access to economic and political power, but also targeted ethic minority women in violent repressive campaigns. The military, of course, was an almost entirely male institution, and it came to control almost every aspect of life in Burma. As the economy, conditions of life, and public sphere in Burma suffered from military rule, so too did Burmese women, though a few elite women, personally connected to the military, were able to continue to exercise influence in the traditional manner.

In chapter seven, Harriden addresses the case of Aung San Suu Kyi, the exception to the rule of Burmese women's general exclusion from political power. Harriden seeks to account for Aung San Suu Kyi's tremendous influence, and finds some of the explanation in traditional Burmese models of family power: Aung San Suu Kyi is the daughter of the martyred hero of Burmese nationalism Aung San. But more than this, Aung San Suu Kyi's moral authority and personal charisma—her *awza*—have given her a unique position in Burmese politics (p. 221). But this personal prominence has not translated into greater opportunities for Burmese women more generally, as Aung San Suu Kyi has commonly been treated as a singular and exceptional case, both

in terms of her lineage and her personal qualities. Harriden also notes that the military regime attempted to use Aung San Suu Kyi's marriage to Michael Aris to discredit her, drawing on nationalist discourses that censured Burmese women who married foreigners.

The final two chapters of the book analyze women's position in Burma post-1988, with chapter eight addressing women's "advancement" (the quotation marks belong to Harriden) under the military regime since then, and chapter nine discussing the various women's organizations formed by Burmese women in exile. While the women's organizations associated with the military regime were able, by their association with the dictatorship, to obtain a sizeable membership, these organizations have accomplished little in the way of substantial betterment of women's lives in Burma, serving rather to defend the regime against international criticism. The expatriate women's organizations dedicated to reform, many of which integrate non-traditional conceptions of gender equality in their platform, seem to be a more promising vehicle for change. Harriden concludes with an assessment of the possibilities for collaboration and connection between these expatriate organizations and groups within Burma.

This work is a significant contribution to the existing scholarship on Burma, and is innovative in its focus on the nuances of gendered power relations. As noted above, this work is strongest when discussing women's access to power in Burma from the Konbaung era onwards, but overall Harriden's research is notably thorough. This study will be of interest to scholars of Southeast Asian history and gender relations, and anyone who seeks a better understanding of contemporary Burmese society.

Ashley Wright
Department of History, Washington State University

The Perfect Business? Anti-trafficking and the Sex Trade along the Mekong

Sverre Molland
Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 2012, viii+276 p.

Transnational Crime and Human Rights: Responses to Human Trafficking in the Greater Mekong Subregion

Susan Kneebone and Julie Debeljak
Oxon: Routledge, 2012, xiii+276 p.

Recently, as a response to the global crisis of human trafficking, more attention has been paid to human trafficking in the Greater Mekong Subregion (GMS). However, the literature of human trafficking mainly focuses on prostitution and irregular migration, and always considers the "max-

imization of profit" as the central logic behind human trafficking. But this is only part of the story.

Explaining the social-cultural discourses of human trafficking in the GMS, Sverre Molland, Susan Kneebone, and Julie Debeljak present alternative perspectives on human trafficking in the GMS. In their opinions, there is a tension between the discourse of policy enforcement and human rights in the region.

Transnational Crime and Human Rights: Responses to Human Trafficking in the Greater Mekong Subregion evaluates the legal policy frameworks for responding to human trafficking in the GMS. At international, national, and subnational levels, the authors point out two essential contexts in human trafficking, namely, prostitution and labor migration. Meanwhile, they apply Foucault and Habermas' ideas about discourse to evaluate how competing discourses have shaped policies and how policy responses have respectively changed the discourses.

For instance, Kneebone and Debeljak adopt Foucault's concepts of "bio-politics" and "governmentality"[1] to illustrate the trafficking discourses at both a global and regional level not only explaining "the increased interests in 'securitization' by those who are in power," but also analyzing "why some discourses that may unsettle the status quo are excluded" (Kneebone and Debeljak, p. 24).

In *The Perfect Business? Anti-Trafficking and the Sex Trade along the Mekong*, Sverre Molland comments on the three discourses of traffickers, victims, and anti-traffickers in human trafficking along the Thai-Lao border, with a specific focus on the border towns of Vientiane and Nong Kai. At the same time, Molland interprets human trafficking along the Thai-Lao border from three theoretical approaches. First, he utilizes the "discourse"[2] to explain that institutional practices do not only shape the external world, but also respond to it. Second, he adopts practice theory to explain "how individuals and groups employ a range of strategies and maneuvers to archive certain ends," and "internalize these very same ends" (Molland, p. 14). And third, he introduces Jean-Paul Sartre's analysis of "bad faith"[3] to explain "deliberate ignorance" in human trafficking.

Molland carefully analyzes the price and income hierarchies within the sex industries in Vientiane and Nong Kai, which are different from the idealized depiction of human trafficking. He

1) In the opinion of Kneebone and Debeljak, bio-politics and governmentality produce "knowledge and discourses that become norms for the behaviour and control of populations." For example, "the discourse of human (in) security is inextricably linked within a broader framework of the bio-politics of the population" (Kneebone and Debeljak, p. 24). In brief, Kneebone and Debeljak use Foucault's ideas to "illuminate the narratives which have led to trafficking discourses at the global level and then at the regional level" (p. 26).
2) In the view of Molland, "the human trafficking discourse is not a coherent body of theorized scholarship but a meta-language which consists of a range of loosely connected assumptions which allows for contradictions and discursive slips to co-exist" (Molland 2010, 837).
3) As Molland argues, "bad faith" means "deliberate ignorance" (Molland, p. 19). For example, "anti-traffickers actively attempt to camouflage to themselves what is by necessity a subjective and ambiguous decision they need to make, by giving it an aura of objectivity and due process" (p. 225).

concludes that human trafficking is not parasitic on migration flows from poorer to richer areas. In many cases advanced by Molland, "price for commercial sex in Laos is higher than that in Nong Kai" (Molland, p. 127). Furthermore, Lao sex workers cross border to work in Nong Kai, who break the logic of "maximization of utility." Molland highlights the fact that the analytical models assumed by anti-traffickers do not explain the movement of Lao sex workers mentioned above.

In both books, the authors pose serious challenges both analytically and methodologically to the literature on human trafficking in the following three areas.

First of all, the two books criticize the effectiveness of the definition context of human trafficking in the GMS.

In *The Protocol to Prevent, Suppress and Punish Trafficking in Persons, Especially Women and Children* ("*the Trafficking Protocol*"),[4] one of the most essential international texts to any study on human trafficking, the definition context of human trafficking contains "a range of contradictions and ambiguities" (Molland, p. 8). For example, the overall objective of *the Trafficking Protocol* is to "protect states (through controlling migration), not individuals (protecting migrant laborers' working rights) (p. 43). Moreover, *the Trafficking Protocol* implies that "there is a clear distinction between smuggled and trafficked persons" (Kneebone and Debeljak p. 127). From Molland's point of view, "any recruitment, whether deceptive or not, into prostitution is deemed to be trafficking" (Molland, p. 70). The definition of human trafficking should not be simply accounted for trafficking by referring to ideal models of profitability.

Meanwhile, Molland contends that the literature on human trafficking, which regards human trafficking as a most profitable illegal crime, ignores the fact of low-profit margins along the Thai-Lao border. Molland utilizes the approach of "socialization process" within the venues (such as bar) to explain the reason why sex workers "would consider exploitative prior to recruitment but not after socialization" (Molland, p. 99). In contrast, Kneebone and Debeljak show that the discourse of human trafficking is dominated by traditional security discourse, which regards human trafficking as a transnational organized crime. As a result, "anti-trafficking programmes have focused on alleviating the lack of human security at source" (Kneebone and Debeljak, pp. 64–65).

Secondly, the authors draw lessons from the anti-trafficking sector in the GMS. For a long time, little consideration has been given to the social relationships between a trafficker and a trafficked victim. According to the fieldwork conducted by Molland, recruitment in human trafficking is primarily driven by informal networks of extend acquaintances. Molland suggests that "the greater the emphasis on the horrific situation to which trafficked victims are subjected, the less possible it becomes to imagine any forms of social relationships between a trafficker and a trafficked victim" (Molland, p. 202).

4) See United Nations (2000).

Kneebone and Debeljak show that the anti-trafficking policies in the GMS are shifting from "a female-gendered focus to include trafficking of men and boys," meaning that the discourse is "shifting from prostitution to labour exploitation" (Kneebone and Debeljak, p. 160). However, at the national level, the discourse of anti-trafficking is not reflected in bilateral arrangements in the GMS. For instance, most arrangements responding to human trafficking are not linked with anti-trafficking policies.

In the opinion of Molland, human trafficking employs "both deceptive and non-deceptive recruitment practices" (Molland, p. 141). Concerning the social relationships between a trafficker and an anti-trafficker, Molland explains that traffickers and anti-traffickers have something in common: for example, they are "both actors of bad faith" (p. 234). Because "deliberate ignorance is instrumental for the reproduction of recruitment within the sex industry, anti-traffickers are dispositioned to act in bad faith, as willed avoidance of complexity is intrinsic to the perpetuation of program activities" (p. 235). For the sex workers, "client" and "health worker" have something common in the Thai-Lao context, since "they are both potential sources of material support" (p. 23).

Thirdly, the two books explore the implications for security governance in the near future. Based on the case studies at the Thai-Lao border, Molland describes the heterogeneity in human trafficking as three concentric circles, which provide a clear framework for security governance at three levels: dyadic power relationships between victims and perpetrators as the core circle, organized crime as the middle circle, and the cross-border markets as the outer circle. Furthermore, Molland considers that deceptive and voluntary recruitment are co-present along the Thai-Lao border areas. Recruiting acquaintances and friends into sex work does not necessarily entail negative moral sanctioning. Because the common practice among sex workers' recruitment of others is based on patronage, it is a way of fulfilling reciprocal obligations through patron-client relationships.

Based on the assessments on the social context of sex workers along the Thai-Lao border, Molland concludes by remarking on cultural and social similarities in Thailand and Lao. First, "patron-client relationships remain central" to both countries (Molland, p. 85). For instance, the sex industries in the Vientiane and Nong Kai is "through informal networks of patronage" (p. 140). Second, pre-marital sex places many young women in highly marginalized positions. Third, there is no effective moral sanctioning of prostitution, though stigma regarding sex workers certainly exists. Without necessary governing mentalities[5] on the ground, the trafficking discourse would "allow itself to circulate within its own sphere" (p. 234).

Kneebone and Debeljak compare "Asia Regional Trafficking in Persons Projects" (ATRIP

5) Kneebone and Debeljak interpret "governmentality" of Foucault into "governing mentality," which emphasizes mentality of the main actors in the governing mechanism.

Project)[6] with "Coordinated Mekong Ministerial Initiative Against Trafficking" (COMMIT),[7] and explain why the two mechanisms develop different anti-trafficking measures through "communicative action,"[8] a core concept developed by Habermas. For instance, NGOs are essential actors of "communicative action," especially in the discourse of the trafficking of children. NGOs should work toward the reintegration and repatriation of victims into village communities. Though the "discursive formation" of human trafficking discourse mainly focuses on traditional security discourse, there are still a few exceptions. For example, COMMIT recognizes the importance of a "victim-centered" approach, and involves responses at multi-lateral levels. In contrast, the ATRIP Project mainly focused on law enforcement in human trafficking.

The two books do find answers to the challenges of human trafficking, and deal with human trafficking in a more "victim-centered discourse." However, the two books should have discussed the phenomenon of child soldiers, one of the most highly prevalent forms of human trafficking in the GMS and a marginalized discourse in the field of anti-trafficking policies. On one hand, without consensus among stakeholders, it is impossible to put into place effective mechanisms against child soldiering in the GMS. On the other hand, the stakeholders in anti-trafficking sectors possess different understanding of what child soldiers are.

Though Kneebone and Debeljak discuss the discourse of trafficked children in *Transnational Crime and Human Rights* the length of discussion is comparatively limited, and does not include discussions of child soldiers. As the authors conclude, there is "little independent empirical work on the structured factors leading to trafficking in children" (Kneebone and Debeljak, p. 251). In the GMS, there is not only a lack of "consensus on the definition of trafficking in children," but also a lack of "understanding about exploitation of children in the region" (p. 251), which causes "the lack of incorporation of principles of child protection into the major policy instruments" (p. 255).

Most child soldiers not only face stigma and resentment, but also suffer mental scars. Therefore, the cells composed of child soldiers will likely transform into terrorist cells or criminal cells, which can act in a more extreme and radical fashion than other ones. There was a historic precedent in the GMS. Along the Myanmar-Thailand border, there is a faction of the Karen National Union called "God's Army," which was mainly composed of child soldiers. "God's Army" operated independently and was led by Johnny and Luther Htoo, who were both child soldiers. This faction launched many terrorist attacks on citizens and policemen in Thailand, pushing Thailand's border security into a desperate situation.[9] As a critical security threat, child soldiering in the GMS should

6) See Australian Agency for International Development (2009).
7) The Coordinated Mekong Ministerial Initiative against Human Trafficking (2011).
8) "Communicative action" means "action oriented to arguing and mutual understanding" (Kneebone and Debeljak, p. 25).
9) For example, in January 2000, 10 members of God's Army hijacked a bus near the Burmese-Thai border and forced the driver to take them to Ratchaburi, they seized a hospital in Ratchaburi, Thailand. They held 700 to 800 patients and staff members hostage for 22 hours.

be given more attention in the literature of human trafficking in the GMS.

Overall, *The Perfect Business* and *Transnational Crime and Human Rights* represent a breakthrough in the literature of human trafficking in the GMS. They are essential works which not only benefits specialists in the Greater Mekong Subregion, human trafficking and human rights studies, but can be very useful to future students as well.

Kai Chen 陈锴
College of Public Administration, Zhejiang University

References

Australian Agency for International Development. 2009. Asia Regional Trafficking In Persons Project (ARTIP)—Mid-Term Review. http://www.ausaid.gov.au/Publications/Documents/artip-mtr.pdf, accessed on September 1, 2013.

The Coordinated Mekong Ministerial Initiative against Human Trafficking. 2011. COMMIT 3rd Sub-Regional Plan of Action (COMMIT SPA III 2011–2013). http://www.no-trafficking.org/reports_docs/commit/commit_resources/commit_spaiii_en.pdf, accessed on September 1, 2013.

Molland, Sverre. 2010. "The Perfect Business": Human Trafficking and Lao-Thai Cross-border Migration. *Development and Change* 41(5): 831–855.

United Nations. 2000. Protocol to Prevent, Suppress and Punish Trafficking in Persons, especially Women and Children, Supplementing the United Nations Convention against Transnational Organized Crime. http://www.uncjin.org/Documents/Conventions/dcatoc/final_documents_2/convention_%20traff_eng.pdf, accessed on September 1, 2013.

Questioning Modernity in Indonesia and Malaysia

WENDY MEE and JOEL S. KAHN, eds.
Singapore and Kyoto: NUS Press in association with Kyoto University Press, 2012, vi+257 p.

In Asia, there is a lot of emphasis on the progress. In this light, the term "modernity" is one that is very much bantered about by national leaders and the society in general, but perhaps little understood. The book *Questioning Modernity in Indonesia and Malaysia* engages readers less in a theoretical discussion of the concept of modernity as in its application to two significant countries in the region. The contributors problematize a simplistic East versus West discussion in the study of modernity, contending that the form found in Indonesia and Malaysia "cannot be viewed as merely derivative of a European/Western modernity" (p. 1). The work of Joel S. Kahn, Emeritus Professor of Anthropology at La Trobe University, which argues for what historian John S. Smail called an "autonomous" understanding of modernity in Southeast Asia, is drawn upon in the book. Kahn's work calls for an ethnographic understanding of modernity that is rooted in cultural and

historical context, an approach that has been well-executed by the volume's contributors in their examination of modernity (p. 3).

The editors rightly include the caveat that the volume "does not pretend to be comprehensive in its thematic and geographic scope" (p. 1). Rather than aiming for even distribution of case studies for both countries, the contributors saw value in a wide-ranging distribution of themes. The thematic scope in the examination of modernity is one of the book's strong points. Issues as diverse as capitalism in the border areas and technology in Indonesia and Malaysia are raised in the book.

The first section of the book examines transnational and border-zone identities. Kahn studies manifestations of modernity in marginal communities in his chapter on Islam and capitalism. He argues that modernizing processes are able to come about irrespective of state leadership and criticizes the assumption that modernity is linked to any particular civilization (p. 38). Kenneth Young and Yekti Maunati discussed ethnic identities in Malaysia and Indonesia respectively in separate chapters. Both acknowledge that cultural identity is a construction shaped by the push and pull of historical development (pp. 60, 91). Drawing on Kahn, both highlighted the intercultural foundation of the modern societies in both countries. Young also questions the adequacy of Western social theory in explaining the "modern" concept of social imaginary in Indonesia (p. 81).

The second section discusses the topic of nation-states and citizenships. While, as argued above, a multiplicity of civilizations form the foundations of contemporary life in general, the chapters by Goh Beng Lan and Thung Ju-lan reinforce Kahn's observation of the equally modern "dark aspect" of exclusion and oppression of fringe groups. As Thung pointed out, the modern nation-state is imbued with the "power to exclude" (p. 161). Goh tries to remedy this, looking not at a "modern" universal expression of entitlement to values such as human rights, but to examples from a country's own past for a different way "towards a détente" (p. 128) in resolving the political impasse that resulted from the exclusion. Both acknowledge, however, that the resolution for religious and ethnic minorities in Indonesia and Malaysia will be long in coming and there are no easy answers to the problems of modernity (p. 162).

The final part of the book studies cultural and moral orientations of modernity in Malaysia. Modernity, usually seen as a linear progress towards a certain utopia, ironically fears the inability to continue towards the ideal future. For example, in the case of Malaysia, Maila Stivens observed that the state's response towards its new generation is one of "moral panic" (p. 172), fearing the subsequent generation's inability to carry the successes of the present towards the future. Oh Myung-Seok's chapter critiques Western-centric observations of modern capitalism and emphasizes the importance of local cultural frames of societal analysis in studying aspects of Southeast Asia (p. 201). Meanwhile, Wendy Mee's study aims to shed light on new inventions that represent quintessential modernity and challenge state-led narratives that usually accompany such discussions. Her work posits that it is the ordinary users of technology that sustain modern inventions.

Given the comprehensive coverage in terms of thematic approaches, the discussions could have been better extended geographically. The majority of the case studies in the volume concentrate on Malaysia. Out of the nine chapters, six chapters are dedicated to examining Malaysia and only two look at Indonesia. As the discussion on Malaysia in the volume has been rich and detailed, additional chapters covering issues of modernity in Indonesia would have made for a more balanced perspective.

Other than issues of Indonesian ethnicity and citizenship that had been addressed by Kenneth Young and Thung Ju-Lan, there is definitely a case for a wealth of possible studies on modernity in Indonesia. For instance, the last section in the volume, "Cultural and Moral Orientations," would have benefited from a comparative study of Indonesia. The anti-corruption campaign targeting high-profile officials in the recent years, for example, would have made a fascinating case study of issues pertaining to modernity. Since Indonesia's independence in 1949, the bureaucratization of its economic, political, and military practices has been ongoing. Yet, corruption meant that contemporary Indonesian state institutions, while practicing Western-style bureaucracy, also bear the hallmark of patrimonial culture: patronage (Bünte and Ufen 2009). It would be interesting to have a contributor address the question of how the Indonesian nation-state adopts and adapts to "modern" Western forms of institutions for checks-and-balances. He/she could also ponder the manner in which modern monetization of values leads to conceptions of corruption.

Since Kahn's idea of modern forms of exclusion is not merely ethnic, but also religious, Indonesia would have made an excellent illustration. A study of the subjugation of the religious minorities would confirm Kahn's argument of the "dark side" of contemporary life. For example, post-New Order decentralization, which replicated the state at a local level, has given rise to the central government's inability to protect the Yasmin Bogor Church congregation's freedom to worship. The Indonesian state faces a dilemma in the modern form of exclusion. On the one hand, outside of the six official religions, indigenous religions such as the Sunda Wiwitan are not allowed to declare their faith on their identity cards. On the other hand, while the central government professes adherence to secularist principles in governing the nation, its inability to accept secularist views among its citizens is evident in the jailing of atheist civil servant Alexander Aan for posting "God does not exist" on his Facebook account in June 2012.

There is space for comparative study of both countries in the volume as well. For one, like Malaysia, Indonesia is also seeing the entrance of Islam into both its public and political sphere (Fealy and White 2008). Muhammad Syafii Antonio and Umar Juoro have written about Islamic banking and other economic initiatives in Indonesia (*ibid.*); their insights would make for a fascinating comparison with Kahn and Oh's chapters in the book. Looking at how Indonesia and Malaysia's modernity included looking towards the Middle Eastern-derived, global form of Islam would have enriched the discussion of modernity in the volume.

Finally, given the theoretical nature of the book, it will make useful reading material for

academics who teach theoretical analysis. Students of area studies will also find this volume a good read.

Jennifer Yang Hui 黃阳慧
Centre of Excellence for National Security,
S. Rajaratnam School of International Studies, Nanyang Technological University

References

Bünte, Marco; and Ufen, Andreas, eds. 2009. *Democratization in Post-Suharto Indonesia*. Oxon and New York: Routledge.

Fealy, Greg; and White, Sally, eds. 2008. *Expressing Islam: Religious Life and Politics in Indonesia*. Singapore: ISEAS Publishing.

Freedom from the Press: Journalism and State Power in Singapore

CHERIAN GEORGE

Singapore: NUS Press, 2012, xiii+272 p.

This multi-disciplinary study of the relationship between the Singapore government and the press comes from the author of one of the most widely cited books on Singapore politics in recent times. Cherian George's first book, *Singapore: The Air-Conditioned Nation: Essays on the Politics of Comfort and Control 1990–2000* (2000), was written for a more general audience, and tackled a range of particular ironies that come about in living in illiberal Singapore. In that earlier book, George already pointed out the fact that while "In liberal democracies, it is all about freedom of the press from the government; in Singapore, it is about the government's freedom from the press" (George 2000, 69). These initial instincts have now fully taken root and blossomed in *Freedom from the Press*, reflecting the author's move from a journalistic milieu to an academic one.

Based on extensive historical research, and balanced with insider anecdotes, *Freedom from the Press* is a nuanced, courageous, and perceptive analysis of the relationship between the Singaporean press and the government. Unlike other more quotidian critiques of the journalists, publications, and the government of the country, George provides a far more thorough critical history and theoretical basis for his observations. Crucially, he also acknowledges his own complicity in the matter, having spent most of his early career as a fairly successful journalist for *The Straits Times*—Singapore's main newspaper. This accounts for the book's greatest strength and weakness: although George is able to reveal the inner workings of the mainstream press in Singapore, he is never really able to completely step outside of the system that he is analyzing. What is apparent though is his unwavering (if somewhat old-fashioned) commitment to the primacy of the

mainstream press and his genuine belief that a more independent press would benefit everyone in Singapore, the authoritarian People's Action Party (PAP) government included. George also extrapolates with ease between the micro and macro implications of the PAP's focus on elite control, noting how the independence of the press is entwined with the country's prospects for growth, dynamism, and creativity. He argues that an independent and professional press is essential for the proper functioning of a democracy since it allows self-determination and collective decision-making by providing a credible source of information that benefits both the citizens and the government.

Singapore has a complex, unique political system and media scene, and by providing a succinct primer on the country at the beginning of the text, *Freedom from the Press* allows non-specialist readers to quickly grasp the key historical and social issues at stake. What follows is a comprehensive look at nearly all aspects of the press industry in Singapore and its inextricable ties to the government. A few elements make this book particularly useful for scholars—George's insider perspective, his careful parsing of the historical context for the arguably dysfunctional relations between the government and the press, his keen grasp of the main theoretical *and* practical elements involved in these relations, and his initial look at the impact of alternative media in Singapore. One criticism that might be leveled against the book is that it too quickly dismisses the broadcast media (television and radio) in the city-state, arguing that it merely provides propaganda for the government. A more balanced and in-depth history and analysis of Singaporean news television and radio remains to be written, but the reader will not find one here. In particular, the implications of running a regional news network (Singapore's Channel NewsAsia) based in Singapore really need to be considered in greater detail for a more complete understanding of Singapore's media landscape. Finally, while he does not explicitly say so, George's book also seems to suggest that only journalists and editors in the print media struggle with government directives and self-censorship on a daily basis, an implication which is clearly untrue.

Aside from these minor caveats, the book does justice to its goal of elucidating the complex and seemingly paradoxical relations between the Singapore government and the press. George's first chapter "Beyond the Singapore Paradox" proposes a more balanced and nuanced view of Singaporean society against more simplistic and polemical rationales for its success. George explains the distortions in the relationship between the media and the public by pointing out how much the government uses its legal and institutional power to selectively intimidate and coerce the news media. He also points out crucially that we must see the press as "an institution enmeshed with others and shaped by historical, cultural and economic forces" (p. 15). This too has been critical to the government's success in shaping a more compliant media landscape since historical actions against the press, cultural conformity in the country, and a vested interest in the country's stability (the press companies have shareholders to be accountable to) have reduced the impulse for confrontational or contentious journalism. George argues that "sustaining a pro-

foundly undemocratic media system does not require corrupt politicians and dishonest journalists. [. . .] The system's inadequacies are more structural" (p. 21).

In the next chapter: "Journalism Tamed: The Mechanics of Media Control," George provides keenly researched detail on exactly how the government has been able to coerce the media through a mix of ideology, cooptation and legal controls, and how the full weight of the law, its "coercive power underwrites its politest requests for cooperation" (p. 45). He also documents how journalism in Singapore has shifted to "cultivating the public as consumers and investors rather than citizens" (p. 45) by focusing on stories on "lifestyle," entertainment and personal finance. The book's third chapter "Inside the Press: Routines, Values and 'OB' (Out of Bounds) Markers," provides an insider's view on the day to day running of the national newspaper and cautiously critiques the lack of "objective journalism" in the country. George posits that it is not the journalists or editors who lack objectivity; rather, a combination of the exigencies of news production, governmental and popular expectations, and the absence of political pluralism mean that the finished product is often less than satisfactory.

George's book then moves to a wider critique of the Singapore government's policy of elite control. In the chapters "Government Unlimited: The Ideology of State Primacy," and "Calibrated Coercion: The State Strategy of Self-Restraint," George delineates the position of the press in Singapore as "subordinated to the overriding needs of the integrity of Singapore, and to the primacy of purpose of an elected government" (p. 74). Summing this up, he recalls the elder statesman Lee Kuan Yew quipping that "While democracy and human rights are worthwhile ideas, we should be clear that the real objective is good government" (p. 77). This belief, he argues, prevents any progress in press reform and the development of a thoroughly informed and committed populace, since the PAP paradoxically infantilizes the population through censorship and expects it to be "rational" and vote for the PAP out of self-interest. Even more interesting is George's concept of "calibrated coercion" which he believes is the PAP's key to continued dominance. Calibrated coercion, which George defines as the government's refusal to use excessive force and violence against its citizens, "minimizes the sense of moral outrage that could be used to mobilize the public against the state [. . .] reduces the salience of coercion, making consensus seem like the sole basis for stability, thus strengthening hegemony [. . . and] preserves incentives for economic production and wealth creation, which rulers need as much as the ruled" (p. 108). Singapore's government is only able to accomplish this form of coercion through the "perfect storm" of a monopoly of power, a history of repression, a restricted political arena and its access through invisible forms of coercion in the form of market forces and technological constraints. The government also practices what George terms "meta-censorship"—the "censorship of information about the exercise of censorship" (p. 115)—making the unknowns completely unknown as it were.

The rest of George's book mostly functions as a more recent chronicle of developments in Singapore's media scene. While, chapter six, "The Harmony Myth: Asian Media's Radical Past,"

provides a historic background to the current media controls, the subsequent chapters "Freedom of the Press: A Cause Without Rebels," "Alternative Online Media: Challenging the Gatekeepers," and "Rise of the Unruly: Media Activism and Civil Disobedience" ostensibly go beyond the book's initial brief of analyzing the print media in Singapore. George provides a fairly comprehensive roundup of the effects of the internet on the availability and reliability of news in the country and also documents a small but growing activist movement. One particularly salient point that he brings out is how the internet functions as a space that unveils the counter-hegemonic conversations that are actually taking place on the island, what he calls the "hidden transcript" of Singaporean life. The revelation of this blackly humorous and irreverent transcript, he argues, has had a powerful psychological effect since "Singaporeans showed one another a different way of relating to their government, not as obedient children, but as citizens who deserved to be treated with respect" (p. 181).

The book's most ambitious theoretical and wide-ranging ambitions however are reserved for George's last chapter "Networked Hegemony: Consolidating the Political System." George posits that the PAP has "embedded itself in dense networks that keep it connected with its mass base, local elites, and global economic actors" (p. 202) to compensate for the limits of its authoritarian style of government. Yet, George argues that networked hegemony has its limitations too, particularly when combined with a weakened press. He ominously concludes his book with a poignant awareness of the unfulfilled potential of Singapore's five million strong cosmopolitan city, stymied by the PAP's authoritarian rule and its "single-minded focus on the risk of total failure" (p. 225). *Freedom from the Press* is indispensable for scholars of Singapore's media landscape, politics and culture. Indeed, it has many interesting theoretical implications for those readers interested in other illiberal societies in the region and beyond.

Joanne Leow
Department of English, University of Toronto

Reference

George, Cherian. 2000. *Singapore: The Air-Conditioned Nation: Essays on the Politics of Comfort and Control 1990–2000*. Singapore: Landmark Books.

Ghosts of the Past in Southern Thailand: Essays on the History and Historiography of Patani

PATRICK JORY, ed.

Singapore: NUS press, 2013, xxix+336 p.

> "While the southern insurgency continues, the history of Patani will continue to be a battleground" (intro. xix).

Since the outbreak of the insurgency in southern Thailand in 2004, numerous studies about Patani have been published by Thai and international scholars. However, those dealing with the history of Patani from a Malay and Islamic viewpoint are rare. This volume, a product of the international seminar organized by Walailak University, Chulalongkorn University, and other institutes in 2009, is one of them. It can be said that this volume is a sequel to the previous book co-edited by Michael Montesano and Patrick Jory, *Thai South and Malay North* (2008), but it is unique in the way that it highlights the history and historiography of Patani from different perspectives, especially from Malay and Islamic studies. In effect, it offers a new framework that challenges conventional ways of studying Patani within the context of Thai studies.

The book consists of four parts. The first explores Patani as a plural community and its identity in the early-modern era. Anthony Reid begins chapter one by pointing out the fact that Patani in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries was a multi-racial community and not just a Malay society, as stressed by Patani nationalists. Reid's argument on Patani's pluralism has been stressed previously in *Thai South and Malay North*. In this essay, however, Reid draws on contemporary Dutch sources to illuminate the people and society of Patani. Another highlight of this essay is a full English translation of an account of Patani by Jacob van Neck, a Dutch merchant who visited Patani in 1602, an account that sheds a light on the social history of the polity. Barbara Watson Andaya's chapter discusses Patani identity through the symbology of *Hikayat Patani*, the most well-known indigenous source originally written in Jawi. The most potent symbols include the elephant gate, elephants, Patani canons, and the *nobat* orchestra. Geoff Wade provides a summary of various Chinese accounts referring to Patani, dating from the sixth to the nineteenth centuries. His translation and summary of these accounts emphasizes how Chinese sources are important in unraveling the early-modern history of Patani.

Three articles in the second part draw attention to Patani's Islamic scholars, or *ulama*, and their connections with the Middle East. Azyumardi Azra examines the life and work of Shaykh Dawud b. Abd Allah al-Fatani, one of the most famous Patani scholars who produced numerous scholarly works on Islam in the nineteenth century. Numan Hayimasae also describes the role of Patani *ulama* from the eighteenth to mid-twentieth centuries in shaping the networks that linked Muslims in Patani to Mecca. Christopher M. Joll, on the other hand, argues that some of the

prominent *ulama*, especially in the early period, were not pure "Malay," but "creole ambassadors," using terminology drawn from the work of Michael Laffan. He points out that they came from well-to-do elite families and had pluralistic ethnic backgrounds that enabled them to play significant roles as religious ambassadors between Southeast Asia and the Middle East.

The third part explores Patani in the periods of political transitional in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries. Francis R. Bradley focuses on the wars between Siam and Patani during 1786–1838 that not only devastated Patani and its people, but also ended the traditional *Mandala* relation between Thai and Patani. Bradley points out a number of tactics Siam employed to subdue Patani and argues that these wars were no small-scale raids but were systematically carried out, a fact that counters the prevailing paradigms concerning early-modern Southeast Asian warfare. Philip King uses Raman, a tin-rich interior region of Patani sharing a border with Perak, as a vantage point for the analysis of Anglo-Siamese activity/rivalry in the interior zone of the Malay Peninsula in the late nineteenth century. King describes the British struggle to claim the land in Raman as a part of Perak, at the time a British protectorate, and Siam's counterclaim. Interestingly, he shows that both the British and Siam tried to write new histories of this area based on their own assumptions about natural boundaries and ethnic identity to back their claims.

The last part deals with the contested historiographies of Patani, the most debated theme on the subject. Dennis Walker analyzes some of the works of Patanian nationalist historiography from the classic period to post-1945 (including recent cyber writers on the internet), their attitude toward the Buddhist Thais and the West, and the consolidation of Islam in shaping Patani identity. Walker points out that the secular nationalism of Patani's nationalists in the post-1945 has been transformed today into "Islamo-nationalist" visions that engage closely with the Middle East and Islam. The article of Iik Arifin Mansurnoor provides a similar overview of the influential works composed in Jawi-Malay and describes the decline and defeat of Patani from the perspective of Malay scholars such as Ahmad Fathi and A. Bangnara. Kobkua Suwannathat-Pian provides a narrative description of Patani history in relation to Thailand and its socio-political change from 1782 to 1980s. By exploring historical works written between 1940s and 1980s by Thai, Malay, and international scholars, Kobkua notes that these works, despite their contradicting versions, have managed to coexist with, while challenging, the history written the victors. Duncan McCargo's chapter focuses on the anonymous leaflets widely distributed after the outbreak of violence in 2004 in southern Thailand. By analyzing the content in the leaflets, he points out that they were issued by various groups including militants, Thai security forces, and Muslim and Buddhist groups. At the same time, they all seek to use alternative readings of history for propaganda purposes, and the multiple narratives of Patani's history reflect the ambiguities underpinning the violence in the south and the lack of clear leadership among the militants.

As stated above, the highlight of this book is that it brings together scholars from various disciplines to shed light on Patani's history and its historiography. There is, however, considerable

overlap in the content in many chapters. For example, in Part Two, the life and work of Patani's *ulama*, Shaykh Dawd Al-Fatani, is discussed in both Azra and Numan's chapters. Even though both chapters have a slightly different framework, they reach similar conclusions about the role of *ulama* and their network. In Part Four, Walker and Mansurnoor both focus on the historiographies of Patani by Patani nationalists and offer similar remarks on Patani's changing national identity from secular to Islamic and Middle East-oriented. Yet, only their terminology differs: Walker uses the term "Islamo-Malay Patanian nation" (p. 185), while Mansurnoor uses "Patani *Jawi* nation" (p. 276). The unevenness of topics is also noticeable. Stories about the rise and fall of Patani and its female rulers written in *Hikayat Patani* are repeatedly discussed in many chapters, while the history of Patani in the crucial period of the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries are discussed in only two chapters in Part Two.

Overall, this book is a valuable collection that deepens and broadens the existing knowledge and public consciousness of the history of southern Thailand. Ethno-religious conflict between Thai Buddhists and Malay Muslims still continues, as does historical writing. However, as Jory notes, history does not necessarily have to determine Patani's destiny. At the same time, history should not be hijacked by any one group to serve its political or religious objectives.

Piyada Chonlaworn ปิยดา ชลวร
CSEAS

References

Laffan, Michael F. 2003. *Islamic Nationhood and Colonial Indonesia: The Umma below the Winds*. London: Routledge.

Montesano, Michael J.; and Jory, Patrick, eds. 2008. *Thai South and Malay North: Ethnic Interactions on a Plural Peninsula*. Singapore: NUS Press.

The Lahu Minority in Southwest China: A Response to Ethnic Marginalization on the Frontier

JIANXIONG MA

Oxon: Routledge, 2013, xvii+254 p.

Ever since economic liberalization in the 1980s, modernization and policies that deal with ethnic minorities have become important issues in the study of present day China. Since the establishment of the Chinese Communist Party, ethnic diversity in Southwest China has been a major component in ethnic policy, and therefore ethnic issues in this area have drawn much academic interest. Most of the existing studies about minority groups in Southwest China focus on state

construction of ethnic categories, representations of identity, and the politics of cultural discourses on ethnicity (e.g. Schein 2000; Harrell 1995), while only a few works have provided detailed anthropological data about what happens in the everyday lives of the people. This book focuses on the daily experiences of ethnic minorities to highlight the pressures they face as they deal with the challenges brought about by modernization and marketization. In doing so, it aims to explain the social and cultural mechanisms of ethnic marginalization in China, a result of the long-term pressure brought to bear on minorities by mainstream Han societies. With ample data from long-term fieldwork among the Lahu people, Ma Jianxiong vividly describes and analyzes Lahu lives on the frontier that have hitherto been inaccessible.

The book consists of eight chapters, including an introduction and concluding remarks. Covering a wide range of topics and contents, it discusses the relationships between ethnic minorities and the Han majority and their identity formation.

In the introduction, Ma briefly explains the identity-building process of the Lahu. He argues that Lahu identity is constantly generated through their relationship with the state or the Han majority. Along with contact with Han migrants in the eighteenth century, Mahayana Buddhism was introduced to the Lahu area and combined with the worldview of the Lahu and subsequently became the "E sha Buddha religious movement." This movement was seen as a form of resistance to the state and was destroyed by the Qing army. Chapter two follows the history of changing ethnic relationships between the Han and the Lahu since the 1920s when Han migrants first came to his field site. Through policies such as the creation of People's Communes and the Cultural Revolution itself, the Lahu belief system was repeatedly undermined. Subsequently, after the revival of the market economy in the 1980s, Han cadres and businessmen "hijacked" representatives of the Lahu.

Chapter three discusses the supernatural world and belief system of the Lahu. With ample citation from mythological tales and case studies, the author shows the cyclical nature of the cosmic view of the Lahu, and the traffic between the world of the dead and world of the living. There are various actors that mediate between the two worlds, such as dead parents, numerous spirits and carnivorous spirits. Everyday life is full of tension because of these actors, and the author claims that their rituals are "self-negation rituals" (p. 96) because issues that arise with such actors are considered a result of their own personal wrongdoings. As such, these rituals are a cultural response to long-term external pressure.

Chapter four deals with the Lahu kinship system. From detailed case studies of division of land upon marriage, Ma meticulously illustrates the bilateral and non-hierarchical kinship system. He states that because the kinship system lacks an internal mechanism of collective cohesion, the Lahu needed political and religious authority from outside their community such as that provided by E sha Buddha to forge unity against historical Qing state power. This authority has now disappeared and is exacerbated by an absence of representatives among the Lahu, becoming more

problematic since 1958 when all religious activities were banned.

Chapter six merits being dealt with before five and seven which are both closely related. It deals with poverty reduction and education and concerns itself with a government project for frontier people and its effects on their daily lives. Since local government revenue in Lan County can only cover a small portion of the county expenses, various kinds of funding from higher-level governments have become a fundamental resource for maintaining the administrative system. Villagers are forced to cooperate with cadres or teachers and to prepare for endless inspections. These projects and education become, as Ma puts it, a demonstration of a kind of ethnic dichotomy between "the advanced Han" and "the backward Lahu."

Chapters five and seven deal with the Lahu people's responses to pressure and marginalization by the Han. Chapter five, "To Become Wives of the Han," is about women's escape from their homeland or even at times Lahu identity. Since the 1980s, the ratio imbalance between the sexes at birth has continued in rural China and therefore many Lahu women have married Han men outside Yunnan through brokering networks. This is because these brokers, and even local Han cadres, repeatedly emphasized the discourse of "leaving is better," thereby reinforcing the dichotomy between the "advanced Han" and "backward Lahu." Chapter seven focuses on the responses to this situation among young Lahu men. Alongside women's departures, young Lahu men face difficulties in finding spouses and hence they "escape" to the world of the dead. This is the reason for the high rate of suicide among Lahu people in Lan County. Ma points out that the suicides and departures resulted from pressure in their daily lives and "the pain of being Lahu." Ma concludes with a discussion of how the dual discourse of the Han and the Lahu is strengthened through daily tensions.

This book is based on fieldwork of more than 15 years. It is indeed rare for researchers to conduct such long-term research in Yunnan's borderlands, so the data and insights are valuable in themselves. Because of his bottom-up perspective, we can learn about the experiences of the Lahu and observe the changes that the Lahu value system has undergone over the years. Monographs on the Lahu in China are far fewer compared to those on the Lahu in Thailand, so this book is an important scholarly resource. The detailed descriptions are very engaging and Ma's conscious efforts to incorporate historical considerations render his contribution even more valuable. Much of the current discussions about ethnic minorities in China have concentrated on ethnic formation after the communist party. This book persuasively shows how Lahu ethnic identity took shape through their encounters with the Han. This is in sharp contrast to another ethnographic work on the Chinese Lahu, Du Shanshan's *Chopsticks Only Work in Pairs*, which is about Lahu gender unity and egalitarianism (2003). She vividly discusses the notion of gender but pays little attention to historical aspects of identity formation. Ma's book supplements Du Shanshan's work by citing many valuable sources.

Although the book is a valuable contribution, some points should be raised for further discus-

sion. First of all, I would like to draw attention to literature on the Lahu in Thailand, most of which is not currently available in English. Ma emphasizes the contrasting conditions in China and Thailand: E sha belief is well practiced in Thailand and social problems are seldom found. However, Nishimoto Yoichi (2000) has shown that a narrative of inferiority exists as well among Christian Lahu in Thailand who have been marginalized through complex border politics. Furthermore, Kataoka Tatsuki's (2007) discussion of Christianity among the Lahu highlights the characteristics of Lahu religion, centering on the coexistence of monotheism and animism, and the history of several charismatic religious movements. These were not always one-way processes, but rather a religious vacillation between monotheism and animism. By taking these studies into consideration, Ma's research can be placed in the continuum of such dynamic religious movements. As an aspiring researcher of Lahu people, I hope that there will be more communication across language barriers among Lahu scholars in the near future.

The second point concerns the description of the marginalization process. In spite of a wide variety of data, all the chapter conclusions culminate in "marginalization by the Han," as if it were a pre-established fact. In fact, some of the practices described may not necessarily be interpreted as marginalization. For example, Ma interprets the practices related to the *ne* spirits as a "self-negation ritual" resulting from marginalization. His reasoning is that the ritual appeared in Ban village only after the loss of their charismatic "E sha Buddha" and since then they believed their sickness or misfortune was due to their own wrongdoings, as a result of which their dead parents let *ne* spirits bite their children as punishment. Are "self-negation" and "marginalization" the only interpretations possible? One can argue, for example, that the phenomenon can be understood as a way of thinking about reasons for misfortune. Even if E sha Buddha were not destroyed by the state, personal misfortune can be explained as a result of one's own wrongdoings such as impiety towards E sha Buddha. While this is a way of explaining misfortune by personal "wrongdoings," it does not have to be seen as "self-negation." Certainly the Lahu are a marginalized ethnic group in China, but the author seems to be too hasty in overemphasizing their marginalization as an explanatory factor.

Finally, I would like to question the way the author repeatedly emphasizes the difference between "native Lahu" and "Lahu-minded Han." It is not clear what is Lahu-ness or Han-ness. The relationship between culture and ethnicity has been much discussed in mainland Southeast Asia (Moerman 1965; Keyes 1992), and scholarship has repeatedly questioned the assumptions of ethnic essentialism. Since the arrival of the Han, there have been many inter-ethnic marriages between the Lahu and the Han in Lan County over 200 years, and the differences between the Lahu and the Han are, in many situations, blurred. In my own field site, many Lahu farmers said that in ancient times they had been Han and migrated from the North, but now they have become Lahu through inter-marriage, changing customs and practices. Would such villagers be categorized as "Lahu-minded Han" or "Lahu of Han origin"? Ma emphasizes the contrast between two ethnic-

ities so as to illustrate the marginalization by one over another, but at the cost of neglecting the dynamic relationships that obtain between the two. Of course there is oppression and marginalization. But in everyday life the Lahu and the Han are inevitably related and have to interact with each other. In some situations the narrative of differences would have to be seen as strategies in themselves. Had Ma been able to illustrate the ties and interaction between them alongside the differences, without reducing these ties to the issue of "marginalization," the wealth of field data could have been used even more persuasively.

Although I have pointed out some issues in the author's interpretation of his data, I certainly agree that there are many tensions and problems in the local politics of many minority areas in modern day China. This book employs a bottom-up perspective to issue an important warning against serious future ethnic destruction. At the same time, it shows how ethnic identity is constituted through historical processes. *The Lahu Minority in Southwest China* is an important contribution towards the understanding of the complex politics of ethnic formation in southwest China.

Horie Mio 堀江未央
Graduate School of Asian and African Area Studies, Kyoto University

References

Du, Shanshan. 2003. *Chopsticks Only Work in Pairs: Gender Unity and Gender Equality among the Lahu of Southwest China*. Columbia University Press.

Harrell, Stevan, ed. 1995. *Cultural Encounters on China's Ethnic Frontiers*. Seattle and London: University of Washington Press.

Kataoka Tatsuki 片岡　樹. 2007. *Tai Sanchi Isshin Kyoto no Minzokushi: Kirisuto Kyoto Rafu no Kokka, Minzoku, Bunka* タイ山地一神教徒の民族誌――キリスト教徒ラフの国家・民族・文化 [An ethnography of monotheists in the hills of Thailand: The state, ethnicity, and culture of Christian Lahu]. Tokyo: Fukyosha.

Keyes, Charles F. 1992. *Who Are the Lue Revisited? Ethnic Identity in Laos, Thailand and China*. Cambridge: Massachusetts Institute of Technology, Center for International Studies, Working Paper.

Moerman, Michael. 1965. Ethnic Identification in a Complex Civilization: Who Are the Lue? *American Anthropologist* 67(5): 1215–1230

Nishimoto, Yoichi. 2000. *Lahu Narratives of Inferiority: Christianity and Minority in Ethnic Power Relations*. Chiang Rai: Center for Inter-Ethnic Studies, Rajabhat Institute Chiang Rai.

Schein, Louisa. 2000. *Minority Rules: The Miao and the Feminine in China's Cultural Politics.* Durham, NC and London: Duke University Press.

Index to Southeast Asian Studies Vol. 2

Vol. 2 No. 1 April 2013

Vol. 2 No. 2 August 2013

Articles

Book Reviews

Vol. 2 No. 3 December 2013

Special Focus: Reconstructing Intra-Southeast Asian Trade, c.1780–1870: Evidence of Regional Integration under the Regime of Colonial Free Trade

Guest Editor: Kaoru SUGIHARA

Articles

Research Report

Book Reviews

SOJOURN

Journal of Social Issues in Southeast Asia

SOJOURN is an internationally refereed journal devoted to the study of social and cultural issues in Southeast Asia. Empirical and theoretical research articles are published with a view to promoting and disseminating scholarship in and on the region. Areas of interest include urbanization, migration, ethnicity, religion, popular culture, nation-building, civil society, family and gender.

Published three times a year, in March, July and November, by Singapore's Institute of Southeast Asian Studies (ISEAS), **SOJOURN** is on the list of the **100+ most important periodicals in Asian studies** selected by the Association for Asian Studies for indexing.

ANNUAL SUBSCRIPTION RATES FOR 2014

(print & electronic)	*Individuals*	*Institutions*
Asia/Australia/New Zealand/Japan	US$66	US$122
Europe/North & South AmericaAfrica/Middle East	US$90	US$167
Singapore/Malaysia/Brunei	S$80	S$142

ELECTRONIC ACCESS

The contents page of the current issue as well as the article abstracts are available for free viewing online at <**http://bookshop.iseas.edu.sg**>. Free access to the Electronic Document Delivery service is by User ID and password for individual subscribers. Institutional subscribers are bound by terms and conditions. This Electronic Document Delivery service is also available to non-subscribers at S$10.20/US6.00 per article. For more information, visit <**http://bookshop.iseas.edu.sg**>.

TO ORDER:

Tel: **65-6870-2489** • ***Fax:*** **65-6775-6259**
E-mail: **pubsunit@iseas.edu.sg**
Website: **<http://bookshop.iseas.edu.sg>**

INSTITUTE OF SOUTHEAST ASIAN STUDIES
30 Heng Mui Keng Terrace, Singapore 119614

Asian Studies

Call for Papers

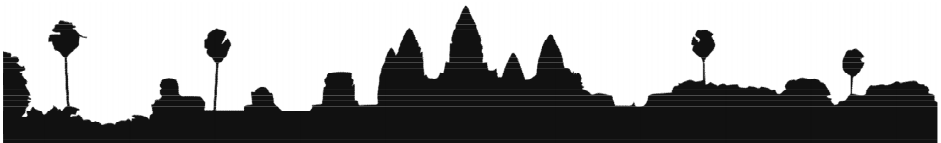
Asian Studies is an open-access, peer-reviewed academic journal published since 1963 by the Asian Center, University of the Philippines Diliman. Promoting original and penetrating research, it offers novel and alternative interpretations of Asian experiences, helps deepens the understanding of the region, and enlivens debates on issues affecting Asian peoples and societies.

One of the pioneering journals of its kind in Asia, **Asian Studies** offers a critical, multidisciplinary platform where scholars, practitioners, and activists can publish research that draws on the theories and perspectives from the social sciences, humanities, and/or cultural studies. Published twice a year, the journal welcomes:

- Full-length research articles
- Commentaries and documents
- Reviews
- Poetry and short fiction, and
- Travel narratives.

Content and submission guidelines: **http://asj.upd.edu.ph**. Submissions are welcome year-round.

Send all manuscripts to the editor in chief: upasianstudies@gmail.com.



A Journal of Critical Perspectives on Asia